Mr. Wollaston
THE RELIGION OF NATURE DELINEATED.

"Ενιοι φεύγοντες τὴν Δεισιδαμονίαν ἐμπίπτεισιν εἰς Ἀθέτημα τεσσαρεῖαν καὶ ἀντίτυπον, ὑφερεποδησαντες ἔν Μέσῳ κερινν τις Ἐναύιειαν. Plutarch.

Χαίρειν ἐν ἐάντος τὰς Τιμὰς τὰς τῶν πολλῶν ἀνθρώπων. τῶν Ἀλήθειαν συνοπῶν, περάσομαι τῷ ὄντι ὅσ ἀν δύνωμαι βέλτιστος ὦν καλίζον, καὶ ἐκεῖνον ἀποθενόμε, ἀποθενόκειν. Plato.

The Sixth Edition.

To which is added a Preface, containing a General Account of the Life, Character, and Writings of the Author.

LONDON:

Printed for John and Paul Knapton, at the Crown in Ludgate-Street. MDCCXXXVIII.
A PREFACE
CONTAINING
A General Account of the Life, Character, and Writings of the Author.

Perhaps the Perusal of the following Sheets may excite the Curiosity of the Reader to wish for some General Account concerning the Author of them: And it is not improbable that He may desire to know, in particular, Whether the Person who composed them was a mere Speculative Admire of Virtue; or whether He was Himself an Example of that Morality which He has so strongly recommended to the Practice of Others. If such a Curiosity shall happen to be raised in any One who was quite a Stranger to this Gentleman's Life and Character, This slight Sketch of Both may chance in some Measure to gratify it.

A 2.

Mr. William
Mr. William Wollaston, the Author of the Religion of Nature delineated, was descended from a Family which appears to have been ancient and considerable in the County of Stafford. It was, long since, divided into Two Branches: The former of which continued seated in Staffordshire; But the latter was in process of Time transplanted into other Counties. The Head of the Second Branch flourished formerly at Oncot in the County of Stafford; but, of late Years, at Shenton in the County of Leicester: and was possessed of a very considerable Estate in those and other Counties. From this Second Branch was our Author descended: And from a younger Brother of the same Branch sprung Sir John Wollaston, Lord Mayor of London, well known in that City at the Time of the late Civil War.

Mr. Wollaston was born upon the 26th of March 1659. at Coton-Clanford in Staffordshire. When He was in the 10th Year of his Age, a Latin School was opened at Shenton in Staffordshire, where his Father, a private Gentleman, of a small Fortune, then resided: And Mr. Wollaston was immediately sent to the Master of it for such Instruction as he was capable to give Him; and continued near two Years under his Care. Afterwards He was sent to Litchfield School: in which a great Confusion soon after happened, and the Magistrates of the City turned the Master out of the School-House. Many Scholars followed the Ejected Master: And Mr. Wollaston amongst the Rest. He remained with him till He quitted his School, which was about three Years: And then, the Schism being ended, He returned into the Free-School, and continued there about a Year. This was All the Schooling Mr. Wollaston ever had: And this Time was passed, not without Uneasiness. For, though He was always a great Lover of his Book, and desirous of Improvement, Yet the Rudeness of a Great School was particularly disagreeable to his Nature; and, what was still worse, He began to be much infested with the Head-Ach, which seems to have been constitutional in Him.

Upon the 18th of June 1674. He was admitted a Pensioner in Sidney College in Cambridge; being then so much upwards of 15 Years of Age as from the 26th of the preceding March. But here He laboured under various Disadvantages: to which a Person so circumstanced as He then was,
A P R E F A C E.

was, could not but be subject. He had no Acquaintance in the College, nor even in the University (to which He was come a Country Lad from a Country School;) few Books or Materials to work with; no Assistance or Direction from any Body; nor sufficient Confidence to supply that Defect by inquiring from others. Add to this, That his State of Health was not quite firm: And that his Allowance was by no Means more than sufficient for bare Necessaries; his then Situation being that of a Second Son of a Third Son of a Second Son of a Second Son. (Tho' indeed, notwithstanding this Series of younger Brothers, his Grandfather, who stands in the middle of it, had had a considerable Estate both Real and Personal, together with an Office of 700 l. per Annum.) However, under All these Disadvantages, Mr. WOLLASTON acquired a great Degree of Reputation in the University: perhaps too much; For had it been less, it might have escaped the Tax of Envy, which probably was the Cause of His missing a Preferment in the College, which a Young Man of his Character had Reason to expect.

Upon the 29th of September 1681, He left the University: being then Twenty-two Years and an Half Old. He had commenced Master of Arts the Summer before: And it seems to have been about this Time, that He took Deacon's Orders.

From Cambridge He went to pay his Duty to his Father and Mother, who now lived at Great Bloxwyche: having first made a Three Weeks Visit to the then Head of this Branch of the Family, his Cousin WOLLASTON of Shenton. And He remained at Bloxwyche, with his Father and Mother (whom He had not seen for many Years before) till May or June 1682. About which Time, seeing no Prospect of Preferment, He so far conformed Himself to the Circumstances of his Fortune as to become Assistant to the Head-Master of Birmingham School: Who readily embraced the Opportunity of such a Co-Adjutor, and consider'd Mr. WOLLASTON as one that prudentially stooped to an Employment below what He might have reasonably pretended to. And his Cousin of Shenton was far from being displeased at this Instance of his Relation's humble Industry.

In a short Time He got a small Lectorship at a Chappel about two Miles distant. But He did the Duty of the Whole Sunday: Which, to-
A PREFACE.

together with the Business of a Great Free-School, for about four Years began to break his Constitution; and, if continued, had probably overcome it quite, though the *Stamina* of it were naturally very strong.

During this Space He likewise suffered many Anxieties and underwent a Deal of Trouble and Uneasiness, in order to extricate Two of his Brothers from some Inconveniences to which their own Imprudencies had subjected them. And in the good Offices which He did them at this Time, He seems to have rather over-acted his Part: For He indulged his Affection for them more than was consistent with a due Regard to his own Welfare, as He was then circumstanced.

When He had been about four Years at *Birmingham*, He was chosen Second Mafter of the School: In which there were three Masters, two Assistants, and a Writing-Master. It was pretended that He was too Young to be Head-Master of so great a School: But in Reality, the Old Mafter was turned out in order to make way for a particular Person to succeed Him. In this Matter some of the Governors themselves owned that Mr. *Wollaston* had Wrong done Him. He kept this new Station about two Years. It was worth to Him about 70 l. *per Annum*. Upon this Occasion He took Priest's Orders: For the Words of the Character were interpreted to require that the Masters should be in *those* Orders, and yet must take no Ecclesiastical Preferment.

The late Chief Mafter, a valuable and good Old Man, and for whom Mr. *Wollaston* of *Shenton* had an Esteem, retired after his Expulsion to his Brother's House in the Neighbourhood of *Shenton*. He once or twice waited upon Mr. *Wollaston* of *Shenton*: And undoubtedly informed Him of the Character, Learning, Conversation and Conduct of our Author; which He was very capable of doing, because they had lived together till the Time of the Old Gentleman's leaving *Birmingham*.

Mr. *Wollaston* of *Shenton* having now lately left his only Son, and never intending (as appears from his whole Conduct) to give his Estate to his Daughters, pursued his Father's Design of continuing it in the Male Line, and resolved to settle it upon our Author's Uncle and Father (his own first Cousins and his nearest Male Relations) in the same Proportions and Manner exactly in which it had been intailed formerly upon them by his
his Father. And accordingly He made such a Settlement: subject however to a Revocation.

Mr. Wollaston all this While applied Himself to his Business: and never so much as waited upon his Cousin, or employed any one to speak or act any thing in his Behalf; (tho' many then blamed Him for not doing so.) Only One Visit He made Him, in the November before his Death: left a Total Absence should be taken for Ingratitude. He went upon a Saturday in the Afternoon; gave Him a Sermon the next Day; received his Hearty Thanks; and the next Morning told Him that He came only to pay those Respects which were due from Him, and to thank Him for all his Favors; and having done that, desired Leave to return to the Duties of his Station: But not one Syllable did He speak, or even inferinuate, in relation to his Estate. His Cousin dismissed Him with great Kindness: And by his Looks and Manner seemed to have a particular regard for him, but discovered nothing of his Intention by Words.

Mr. Wollaston of Shenton was used to employ Persons privately, to observe our Author's Behaviour: (who little suspected any such Matter.) And his Behaviour was found to be such, that the stricter the Observations were upon it, the more they turned to his Advantage. In Fine, Mr. Wollaston of Shenton became so thoroughly satisfied of our Author's Merit, that He revoked the before mentioned Settlement, and made a Will in his Favor.

In August following Mr. Wollaston of Shenton fell sick: and sent secretly to our Author to come over to Him as of his own Accord without any Notice of his Illness. He complied with the Message; and staid some Days at Shenton. But whilst He was gone Home again, under a Promise of returning, his Cousin died.

It was the 19th of August 1688, when this Gentleman died. His Will gave a new and a great Turn to Mr. Wollaston's Affairs: who found Himself intitled by it to a very ample Estate.

The Circumstances relating to the Means whereby Mr. Wollaston came to the Possession of his Estate, and the Steps which led to it, have been
A PREFACE.

been the more minutely particularized here; Because Common Fame has somehow caught up and forwarded a groundless Imagination, That our Author was an absolute Stranger to the former Possessor and his Family, and happened to fall into his Company by mere Accident at an Inn. Which is so far from being true or even bearing any Resemblance to Truth, That they were very near Relations, and this very Estate had been twice entailed upon Mr. Wollaston's Uncle and Father.

Such a Sudden and Advantageous Alteration of Affairs would have intoxicated Many a One. But the same Firmness of Mind which supported this Gentleman under the Pressures of his more Adverse Fortune enabled Him to bear his Prosperity with Moderation: And his Religion and Philosophy taught Him to maintain a due Equanimity under either Extreme.

In November 1688 He came to London: And about a Twelve-month after, upon the 26th of November 1689, He married Mrs. Catharine Charlton, Daughter of Mr. Nicholas Charlton, an eminent Citizen of London, a fine Woman, with a good Fortune and a most excellent Character. They lived extremely happy in each other, till her Death left Him a mournful Widower upon the 21st of July 1720. By Her He had eleven Children: Of whom four died in his Life-time; the rest survived Him.

He may most truly be said to have settled in London: For He very seldom went out of it. He took no Delight in unnecessary Journies: And for above Thirty Years before his Death had not been absent from his Habitation in Charter-House Square, so much as one whole Night.

In this his Settlement in London He chose a Private and Retired Life. His Carriage was nevertheless Free and Open. He acted like one that aimed at solid and real Content, rather than Shew and Grandeur; and manifested his Dislike of Power and Dignity, by refusing one of the highest Preferments in the Church when it was offered to Him. He endeavoured to excell in Sincerity and Useful Sense, more than in Formalities and Trifles.

He had now Books and Leisure: And it was no small Use He made of them. He was perfectly acquainted with the Elementary Parts of Learning:
Learning: And with the learned Languages; Latin, Greek, Hebrew, Arabic, &c. He thought it necessary to add to these such a Degree of Philology and Criticism as seemed likely to be Useful to Him; Mathematical Sciences, or at least the Fundamentals of them; The General Philosophy of Nature; The History and Antiquities of the more known and noted States and Kingdoms; and such like Erudition. And in order to attain the Knowledge of True Religion and the Discovery of Truth, (the Points which He always had particularly in View, and to which He chiefly directed all his Studies,) He diligently inquired into the Idolatries of the Heathens: And made Himself Master of the Sentiments, Rites, and Learning of the Jews; the History of the first Settlement of Christianity, and the Opinions and Practices introduced into it since. In the mean time He exercised and improved his Mind by throwing off Prejudices; using Himself to clear Images; observing the Influence and Extent of Axioms, the Nature and Force of Consequences, and the Method of investigating Truth. In General, He accustomed Himself to Think much.

By this Method indeed He was rather qualified for private Instruction, than accomplished for public Conversation and Shew. But the latter was not his Point. He looked upon that Specious Sort of Knowledge which often gains a Man the Reputation of a Scholar at a very cheap Rate, to be a False Learning and of no kind of Service to Him who was in Quest of Real Knowledge.

He was of Opinion too That a man might easily read too much: And he considered the Helluo Librorum and the True Scholar as two very different Characters.

The Love of Truth and Reason made Him love Free Thinking: and, as far as the World would bear it, Free Speaking too. This tended, He thought, to the Discovery of Error. Tho' He was not insensible that This might render Him less acceptable to many Persons: To those who perhaps have only just sense enough to perceive their own Weakness; or judge of Things by the Vogue they bear, or the Respect they have to their own Interest or Party; or can neither bear the Trouble of an honest Inquiry themselves,
A PREFACE.

nor yet that another should know what they do not know; and, in short, to every Prejudiced Person whatsoever. But He took all Opportunities to assert seriously and inculcate strenuously the Being and Perfections of God; his Providence, both General and Particular; the Obligations we are under to adore Him; the Reasonableness of all Virtue; the Immateriality and Immortality of the Soul; Future Rewards and Punishments; and other High and essential Points of Natural Religion and the Christian Revelation. In Fine, To reason impartially, and to know where to stop, was the Mark He always aimed at.

And He loved Truth, not in Speculation only, but also in Practice: For he loved punctual Honesty.

He likewise delighted in Method and Regularity: And chose to have his Labours and Refreshments Periodical; and that his Family and Friends should observe the proper Seasons of their Revolutions. The Reverse of this being the prevailing Temper, or at least Practice of Man-kind, oftentimes either deprived Him of Conversation or rendered it disagreeable to Him.

The General Character of his Nature was, That it was Tender and Sensible. This Tenderness disposed Him to feel and Compassionate the Miseries of others: Infomuch that He many times suffered more perhaps in another man's Case than the man did in his own. This Tenderness induced Him always to endeavour to satisfy and convince in Cases where He might have commanded most despotically and absolutely. Tho' it is not improbable that in this He was frequently misunderstood as if He meant to chide, when He only intended to explain and convince. To this Tenderness may also be ascribed that excessive Modesty and Diffidence of Himself, which made Him delight in Privacy and Retirement; and incapacitated Him in a great Measure from appearing in Public at all like what He really was; and even occasioned Him sometimes to seem inferior to those who exceeded Him in nothing but Forwardness and Conceit. Something of this might indeed be owing to the Depression of his Spirits
in his younger Days. From the same Causes might arise his strong Apprehension of the Unreasonableness and Injustice of those who were designedly the Beginners of Quarrels or Abuses, or invaded without Provocation Another's Good Name. The same Tenderness rendered Him in a high Manner sensible of the Desertion, Unkindness or Indifference of Friends.

He never indulged his Passions to the Hurt of any One. If in any respect He shewed that He was not so compleat a Stoic as to have eradicated his Passions, or so perfect a Philosopher as never to be surprised by them, it was in the Escape of a hasty Word or Expression now and then, when He was put off of his Guard by Hurries, Indispositions, or such like Occasions. Yet He was not always angry, when the Urgency of Business, the Straitness of Time, the Importunity of impertinent People, or the like, caused Him to talk louder or quicker than ordinary; nor often, (if at all) without sufficient Reason; nor ever so angry with any One else, as He would be with Himself for having been so. In short, If every One would restrain their Anger within the same Bounds as He did, there might be a hasty Word or Expression dropped sometimes upon Provocation or Indisposition: But there would never be Resentment, Wrath or Quarrel more in the World.

He was most remarkably Cheerful and Lively in Private Conversation, and by his Inclination ready, as well as by his Treasures of Learning abundantly qualified to be serviceable to all sorts of Persons. This rendered his Company agreeable; and Himself worthy to be courted by the Learned and Virtuous. But a General Acquaintance was what He never cultivated: and it grew more and more his Aversion. So that He passed his Days mostly at Home, with a few Friends: with whom He could enjoy an agreeable Relaxation of Mind, and receive All the Advantages of a sincere and open Friendship. This Excessive Retirement was however attended with some Inconveniencies. His Intimates were dropping off, and their Places remained unsupplied; His own Infirmities were increasing; The Frequent Remission of Study growing more and more necessary; and his Solitudes at the same Time becoming less and less pleasant and agreeable.
A PREFACE.

What Decays soever there might be in his Bodily Strength, He nevertheless retained to the last the Clearness and Perspicuity of his Thoughts. But perceiving his Designs frustrated by the daily Attacks of Nature, and that it would be impossible to finish and compleat them in the Manner He wished, it seems as if He had intended to destroy with his own Hand the greatest Part of his Works: And that those few Manuscripts which were found after his Death were indebted to the Treachery of his Memory for their Preservation. For He had within the last two or three Years of his Life actually burnt several Treatises, in the Composition whereof He had bestowed no small Quantity of Time and Pains. The following indeed happened to be spared: But from the Place in which they were deposited, and from some other Circumstances, 'tis probable that they owed their Escape to mere Forgetfulness. They were in Number thirteen, (besides about Fourscore Sermons) viz. 1. An Hebrew Grammar. 2. Tyrocinia Arabica & Syriaca. 3. Specimen Vocabularii Biblico-Hebraici, literis nostratibus quantum fert Linguarum Diffonantia descripti. 4. Formulae quaedam Gemarinae. 5. De variis generibus pedum, metrorum, carminum, &c. Apud Judæos, Graecos & Latinos. 6. De Vocum Tonis Monitio ad Tyrones. 7. Rudimenta ad Mathefin & Philosophiam spectantia. 8. Miscellanea Philologica. 9. Opinions of the Ancient Philosophers. 10. iudæa: five Religionis & Literaturæ Judaicæ Synophas. 11. A Collection of some Antiquities and Particulars in the History of Mankind: tending to shew that Men have not been here upon this Earth from Eternity, &c. 12. Some Passages relating to the History of Christ; collected out of the Primitive Fathers. 13. A Treatise relating to the Jews: of their Antiquities, Language, &c. And what renders it the more probable, or indeed almost beyond Doubt, That He would have destroyed these likewise if He had remember'd them, is That several of these which remain undestroyed are only Rudiments or rougher Sketches of what He afterwards reconsidered and carried on much further: and which even after such Revival He nevertheless committed to the Flames, as being still (in his Opinion) short of that perfection to which He desired and had intended to bring them.
A P R E F A C E.

It must be owned indeed that He had formerly published a Paraphrase on Part of the Book of Ecclesiastes, which He had not corrected. But for that very Reason He was afterwards earnestly desirous to suppress it. And He likewise composed and printed a little Latin Grammar. But this was only for the Use of his Family. The former was printed in the Year 1690: The latter in 1703.

Not long before his Death, He published the ensuing Treatise, intitled, "The Religion of Nature delineated;" in which the Picture of his Life is most fully drawn. There you may behold Him in his Real Character: in the humble Submission and Resignation of Himself to the unerring Will of the Divine Being; in his true Conjugal and paternal Affection to his Family; in his kind Regard and Benevolence towards his Fellow-Creatures, according to their respective Stations in Life. For He Himself steadily practised those Duties and Obligations which He so earnestly recommended to Others. The Public Honours paid to his Memory, and the Great Demand for this Book (of which more than Ten Thousand were sold in a very few Years) are sufficient Testimonies of its Value. He had, in the Year 1722, printed off a few Copies of it for private Use. And as soon as he had done so, He began to turn his Thoughts to the Third Question: as appears by a Manuscript intitled Heads and Materials for an Answer to Question 3. Set down rudely and any how, in order to be considered, &c. after they are got into some Order. July 4, 1723. Underneath which He has added. They are written at Length (not in my Short-hand) that so if this Answer should never be finished, they may however not be totally lost. However, in this Design He had Opportunity to make but a very small Progress. For it was just about this Time that, at the Instances and Persuasion of his Friends, He set about revising and publishing the following Work: wherein he had answered the two first of the proposed Questions: Resolving, as soon as that should be done, to return to and finish his Answer to the Third Question.

But
But in _that_ He was disappointed. For immediately after he had com-
pleted the Revisal and Publication of the following Treatise, an acci-
dent of breaking his Arm increased his Distempers, and accelerated 
his Death; which happened upon the 29th of October 1724, and 
has absolutely put an End to the Expectation of seeing _any more_ 
of his Works in _Print_. For it would be _equally injurious to the_ 
Author and _disrepeftful to the Public_, if his _Family_ should _expose_ 
his _more imperfect Sketches_ in _Print after his Death_: when _He him-
self_ had _destroyed several more finished Pieces_, because _He judged_ 
them _not sufficiently accurate._

His Body was carried down to _Great Finborough_ in _Suffolk_, One of 
his _Estates_, and the Principal Residence of his now _Eldest Son_ and _Suc-
cessor_ in his _Estate_: who represents the neighbouring Burrough of _Ipswych_ 
in _Parliament._

From all that has been _said_ concerning _Mr. Wollaston_, it appears 
that notwithstanding his _Declining_ to accept of any _Public_ Employment, 
yet his _Studies_ were designed to be of _Public Use_: And his _Solitude_ 
was far from being employed in _vain and trifling Amusements_ terminating 
in _Himself alone._

His latest Moments were _calm and easy_, Such as might be expected 
to close a _Life_ spent like his: And _He_ _left_ the World, as _He_ _journeyed_ in 
it, _quietly and resignedly_. Both the _Manner of his Life_ and _that of his_ 
_Death_ were _well worthy of_ _Imitation._

It is scarce worth while to take any Notice of an _idle_ or _malicious_ Re-
fection which has been cast, by _some over-zealous Persons_, upon this 
Gentleman's Memory, as _if He had put a Slight upon Christianity_ 
by laying so much _Stress_ upon the _Obligations of Truth, Reason_, 
_and Virtue_: Or _as if He could not have_ _believed_ _aright_, because _He_ 
did not think it necessary to _digress from his Subject_ in order to _insert_ 
_his Creed_. _Surely_, a _Suspicion thus founded_ can _deserve no Regard_. 
However, it may not be _amifs to observe_ that it has _probably been in-
creased by a vulgar mistake_ that _Mr. Wollaston_, the _Author of the_ 

**Religion**
A PREFACE.

RELIGION OF NATURE DELINEATED, was the same Person with Mr. Woolston who wrote several Pieces which grossly attacked the Literal Truth of the Miracles of Jesus Christ. And this Mistake, which arose originally from the Similitude of Names, might happen to be further confirmed by Mr. Woolston's intitling Himself "Late Fellow of Sidney College in Cambridge:" At which College Mr. Woolston Himself and Four of his Sons were educated.
The Religion of Nature delineated.

To A. F. Esq;

WAS much surprized, SIR, when (some time ago) you so importunately desired my thoughts upon these questions,

I. Is there really any such thing as natural religion, properly and truly so called?

II. If there is, what is it?

III. How may a man qualify himself, so as to be able to judge, for himself, of the other religions professed in the world; to settle his own opinions in disputable matters; and then to enjoy tranquility of mind, neither disturbing others, nor being disturbed at what passes among them?

With what view you did this; whether in expectation of some little degree of satisfaction; or merely to try my abilities; or (which I rather think) out of kindness.
nefs to amufe me at a time, when I wanted something to divert melancholy reflections, I shall not venture to guess. I shall only say, that could I have foreseen in due time, that such a task was to be imposed upon me, I might have been better prepared for it. I might have marked what was suitable to my purpose in those books, which I have read, but shall scarce ever return to read any more: many more I might have read too, which, not wanting them for my own conviction, I have neglected, and now have neither leisure nor patience to peruse: I might have noted what the various occurrences and cafes, that happen in life, suggested: and, in general, I might have placed more of my time on such parts of learning, as would have been directly serviceable to me on the present occasion.

However, as I have not spent my days without thinking and reflecting seriously within myself upon the articles and duties of natural religion, and they are my thoughts which you require, I have attempted, by recollecting old meditations, and consulting a few scattered papers, in which I had formerly for my own use set down some of them (briefly, and almost polemically), to give an answer to the two first of your questions, together: tho I must own, not without trouble in adjusting and compacting loose sentiments, filling up vacuities, and bringing the chaos into the shape of something like a system.

Notwithstanding what I have said, in a treatise of natural religion, a subject so beaten and exhausted in all its parts, by all degrees of writers, in which so many notions will inevitably occur that are no one's property, and so many things require to be proved, which can scarce be proved by any other but the old arguments (or not so well), you must not expect to find much that is new. Yet something perhaps you may. That, which is advanced in the following papers, concerning the nature of moral good and evil, and is the prevailing thought that runs thro them all, I never met with anywhere. And even as to those matters, in which I have been prevented by others, and which perhaps may be common, you have them, not as I took them from any body, but as they used to appear to me in my walks and solitudes. So that they are indeed my thoughts, such as have been long mine, which I send you; without any regard to what others have, or have not said: as I persuade myself you will easily perceive. It is not hard to discern, whether a work of this kind be all of a piece; and to distinguish the genuine hand of an author from the false wares and patch-work of a plagiarism. Tho after all, it would be madness in a man to go out of his right way, only because it has been frequented by others, or perhaps is the high road.

Sensible how unfinished this performance is, I call it only a Delineation, or rude draught. Where I am defective, or trip, I hope you will excuse a friend, who
who has now passed the threshold of old age; and is, upon that and other accounts, not able to bear much study or application. And thus I commit to your candor what follows: which, for the sake of order and perspicuity, I have divided into sections, and propositions.

Sect. I. Of Moral Good and Evil.

The foundation of religion lies in that difference between the acts of men, which distinguishes them into good, evil, indifferent. For if there is such a difference, there must be religion; & contra. Upon this account it is that such a long and laborious inquiry hath been made after some general idea, or some rule, by comparing the foresaid acts with which it might appear, to which kind they respectively belong. And tho men have not yet agreed upon any one, yet one certainly there must be. That, which I am going to propose, has always seemed to me not only evidently true, but withal so obvious and plain, that perhaps for this very reason it hath not merited the notice of authors: and the use and application of it is so easy, that if things are but fairly permitted to speak for themselves their own natural language, they will, with a moderate attention, be found themselves to proclaim their own rectitude or obliquity; that is, whether they are disagreeable to it, or not. I shall endeavour by degrees to explain my meaning.

I. That act, which may be denominated morally good or evil, must be the act of a being capable of distinguishing, choosing, and acting for himself: or more briefly, of an intelligent and free agent. Because in proper speaking no act at all can be ascribed to that, which is not induced with these capacities. For that, which cannot di-

---

*Cic.*  
Formula quaedam constitutenda est: quam si sequemur in comparatione verum, ab officio nunquam recederemus. *Cic.*  
Dlices, sancta, rara, quando tu actum singulare in amore, quodest, quoniam est, Arrian. *Ut virtus, si nihil situm est in ipsis nobis?  
Maim.*  
B 2
The Religion of Nature. Sect. I.

flinguish, cannot choose: and that, which has not the opportunity, or liberty of choosing for itself, and acting accordingly, from an internal principle, acts, if it acts at all, under a necessity incumbent ab extra. But that, which acts thus, is in reality only an instrument in the hand of something which imposes the necessity; and cannot properly be said to act, but to be acted. The act must be the act of an agent: therefore not of his instrument.

A being under the above-mentiond inabilities is, as to the morality of its acts, in the state of inert and passive matter, and can be but a machine: to which no language or philosophy ever ascribed ἔννοια or mores.

II. Those propositions are true, which express things as they are: or, truth is the conformity of those words or signs, by which things are express, to the things themselves. Defin.

III. A true proposition may be denied, or things may be denied to be what they are, by deeds, as well as by express words or another proposition. It is certain there is a meaning in many acts and gestures. Every body understands weeping a, laughing, shrugs, frowns, &c. these are a sort of universal language. Applications are many times made, and a kind of dialogue maintaing only by casts of the eye and motions of the adjacent muscles b. And we read of feet, that speak c; of a philosopher, who answered an argument by only getting up and walking d; and of one, who pretended to express the same sentence as many ways by gesticulation, as even Cicero himself could by all his copia of words and eloquence e. But these instances do not come up to my meaning. There are many acts of other kinds, such as constitute the character of a man’s conduct in life, which have in nature, and would be taken by any indifferent judge to have a signification, and to imply some proposition, as plainly to be understood as if it was declared in words: and therefore if what such acts declare to be, is not, they must contradict truth, as much as any false proposition or assertion can.

If a body of soldiers, seeing another body approach, should fire upon them, would not this action declare that they were enemies; and if they were not enemies, would not this military language declare what was false? No, perhaps it may be said; this can only be called a mistake, like that which happend to the Athenians

---

*a* Lacryma pondera vocis habent. 

*b* Oculi, supercellia, frons, vulnus denique totus, qui fermo quidam tacitus mentis est, &c. Cic. Nutu signifique loquuntur. 

*c* Et alia quae fermo corporis. 

*d* Tis katal & κατὰ τιμωρίαν, εἰς ἀκιδήμου. Sext. Emp. So Menedemus reproved luxury by eating only olives. 

*e* Macrobi. 

in
in the attack of *Epipole* a, or to the *Carthaginians* in their last incampment against *Agathocles* in *Africa* b. Suppose then, instead of this firing, some officer to have *said* they were enemies, when indeed they were friends: would not that sentence affirming them to be enemies be false, notwithstanding he who spoke it was mistaken? The truth or falsihood of this affirmation doth not depend upon the affirmer's knowledge or ignorance: because there is a certain sense affixt to the words, which must either agree or disagree to that, concerning which the affirmation is made. The thing is the very same still, if into the place of *words* be substituted *actions*. The salute here was in *nature* the salute of an enemy, but should have been the salute of a friend: therefore it implied a falsity. Any *spectator* would have understood this action as I do; for a declaration, that the other were enemies. Now what is to be understood, has a meaning: and what has a meaning, may be either *true* or *false*: which is as much as can be said of any verbal sentence.

When *Popilius Laenas* solicited to have *Cicero* proscribed, and that he might find him out and be his executioner c, would not his *carriage* have sufficiently *signified* to any one, who was ignorant of the case, that Tully either was some very bad man, and deferred capital punishment; or had some way grievously injured this man; or at least had not saved his life, nor had as much reason to expect his service and good offices upon occasion, as he ever had to expect Tully's? And all these things being false, were not his behaviour and actions *expressive* of that which was false, or *contradictions to truth*? It is certain he acted as if those things had been true, which were not true, and as if those had not been true which were true (in this consisted the fault of his ingratitude): and if he in words had *said* they were true or not true, he had done no more than *talk as if* they were so: why then should not to *act* as if they were true or not true, when they were otherwise, contradict truth as much as to *say* they were so, when they were not so?

A pertinacious *objector* may perhaps still say, it is the business of soldiers to *defend* themselves and their country from enemies, and to annoy them as opportunity permits; and self-preservation requires all men not only barely to defend themselves against aggressors, but many times also to *prosecute* such, and only such, as are wicked and dangerous: therefore it is *natural* to conclude, that they are enemies against whom we see soldiers defending themselves, and those men wicked and dangerous, whom we see prosecuted with zeal and ardor. Not that

---

*a* Where we find *φίλος* et *φίλως*, ἡ *πολίτις* *πολίτης* ἤς *χήρα* ἢ *κέρασις* διδάσκεις. *Thucyd.*  
b *Τυχε* ἡμικράνια ἢς πολεμικά ἢμοιόντο. *Diod.*  
c *Val. Max.*  
d *Αιδέωτοιν* ἕως ἰχθύν ποτὲ ἢ προμόστατον τοιούτων ἱερὸν ἤχοιν πλέον. *Eurip.*  
*Quaeś interit, audiam, an videam.* *Cic.*
The Religion of Nature. Sect. I.

those acts of defending and prosecuting speak or signify so much: but conjectures are raised upon the common sense, which mankind has of such proceedings. Ans.

If it be natural to conclude any thing from them, do they not naturally convey the notice of something to be concluded? And what is conveying the notice of any thing but notifying or signifying that thing? And then again, if this signification is natural and founded in the common principles and sense of mankind, is not this more than to have a meaning which results only from the use of some particular place or country, as that of language doth?

If A should enter into a compact with B, by which he promises and engages never to do some certain thing, and after this he does that thing: in this case it must be granted, that his act interferes with his promise, and is contrary to it. Now it cannot interfere with his promise, but it must also interfere with the truth of that proposition, which says there was such a promise made, or that there is such a compact subsisting. If this proposition be true, A made such a certain agreement with B, it would be denied by this, A never made any agreement with B. Why? Because the truth of this latter is inconsistent with the agreement asserted in the former. The formality of the denial, or that, which makes it to be a denial, is this inconsistency. If then the behaviour of A be inconsistent with the agreement mentioned in the former proposition, that proposition is as much denied by A's behaviour, as it can be by the latter, or any other proposition. Or thus, if one proposition imports or contains that which is contrary to what is contained in another, it is said to contradict this other, and denies the existence of what is contained in it. Just so if one act imports that which is contrary to the import of another, it contradicts this other, and denies its existence. In a word, if A by his actions denies the ingagements, to which he hath subjected himself, his actions deny them; just as we say, Ptolomy by his writings denies the motion of the earth, or his writings deny it.

When the question was asked, Whose sheep are these? the answer was, Αγων's: for he committed them to my care (he uses and disposes of them as his). By this act Damoetas understood them to be his; and if they had not been his, but Alphonso's or Melibæus's, Αγων, by an all very intelligible to Damoetas, had expressed what was not true. What is said here is the stronger, because he, who has the use and disposal of any thing, has all that he can have of it; and v. v. he who has the all (or property) of any thing, must have all the use and disposal of it. So that a man cannot more fully proclaim any thing to be his, than by using it, &c. But of this something more hereafter.
Of Moral Good and Evil.

In the Jewish history we read, that when Abimelek saw Isaac sporting with Rebekah, and taking conjugal liberties, he presently knew her to be Isaac's wife; and if she had not been his wife, the case had been as in the preceding instance. If it be objected, that she might have been his mistress or a harlot; I answer, that so she might have been, tho' Isaac had told him by words that she was his wife. And it is sufficient for my purpose, and to make acts capable of contradicting truth, if they may be allowed to express things as plainly and determinately as words can. Certainly Abimelek gave greater credit to that information which passed through his eye, than to that which he received by the ear; and to what Isaac did, than to what he said. For Isaac had told him, that she was not his wife, but his sister.

A certain author writes to this purpose, "If a soldier, who had taken the oath to Caesar, should run over to the enemy, and serve him against Caesar, and after that be taken; would he not be punished as a deserter, and a perjured villain? And if he should plead for himself, that he never denied Caesar; would it not be answered, That with his tongue he did not deny him, but with his actions (or by facts) he did?" And in another place, "Let us, says he, suppose some tyrant command a Christian to burn incense to Jupiter, without adding any thing of a verbal abnegation of Christ: if the Christian should do this, it would not be manifest to all, that by that very act he denied him;" (and I may add, consequentlly denied those propositions which affirm him to be the Christ, a teacher of true religion, and the like.)

When a man lives, as if he had the estate which he has not, or was in other regards (all fairly cast up) what he is not, what judgment is to be passed upon him? Doth not his whole conduct breath untruth? May we not say (if the propriety of language permits), that he lives a lie?

In common speech we say some actions are insignificant, which would not be so, if there were not some that are significant, that have a tendency and meaning. And this is as much as can be said of articulate sounds, that they are either significant or insignificant.

---

*Note: The text contains references and notes, which are not transcribed here.*
It may not be improperly observed by the way, that the significancy here attributed to mens acts, proceeds not always from nature, but sometimes from custom and agreement among people, as that of words and sounds mostly doth. Acts of the latter kind may in different times and places have different, or even contrary significations. The generality of Christians, when they pray, take off their hats: the Jews, when they pray or say any of their Berakoth, put them on. The same thing which among Christians denotes reverence, imports irreverence among the Jews. The reason is, because covering the head with a hat (if it has no influence upon one’s health) is in itself an indifferent thing, and people by usage or custom may make it interpretable either way. Such acts seem to be adopted into their language, and may be reckoned part of it. But acts of the former kind, such as I chiefly here intend, have an unalterable signification, and can by no agreement or force ever be made to express the contrary to it. Agon’s treating the flock, and disposing of it as if it was his, can by no torture be brought to signify, that it was not his. From whence it appears, that facts express more strongly, even than words themselves; or to contradict any proposition by facts is a fuller and more effectual contradiction, than can possibly be made by words only. Words are but arbitrary signs of our ideas, or indications of our thoughts (that word, which in one language denotes poverty, in another denotes riches): but facts may be taken as the effects of them, or rather as the thoughts themselves produced into acts; as the very conceptions of the mind brought forth.
forth, and grown to maturity; and therefore as the most natural and express representations of them. And, beside this, they bear certain respects to things, which are not arbitrary, but as determinate and immutable as any ratio's are in mathematics. For the facts and the things they respect are just what they are, as much as any two given quantities are; and therefore the respects interceding between those must be as fixed, as the ratio is which one of these bears to the other; that is, they must remain the same, and always speak the same language, till things cease to be what they are.

I lay this down then as a fundamental maxim, *That whoever acts as if things were so, or not so, doth by his acts declare, that they are so, or not so;* as plainly as he could by words, and with more reality. And if the things are otherwise, his acts contradict those propositions, which assert them to be as they are.

IV. No act (whether word b or deed) of any being, to whom moral good and evil are imputable, that interferes with any true proposition, or denies any thing to be as it is, can be right. For,

1. If that proposition, which is false, be wrong c, that act which implies such a proposition, or is founded in it, cannot be right: because it is the very proposition itself in practice.

2. Those propositions, which are true, and express things as they are, express the relation between the subject and the attribute as it is; that is, this is either affirmed or denied of that according to the nature of that relation. And further, this relation (or, if you will, the nature of this relation) is determined and fixed by the natures of the things themselves. Therefore nothing can interfere with any proposition that is true, but it must likewise interfere with nature (the nature of the relation, and the natures of the things themselves too), and consequently be unnatural, or wrong in nature. So very much are those gentlemen mistaken, who by following nature mean only complying with their bodily inclinations, tho in opposition to truth, or at least without any regard to it. Truth is but a conformity to nature: and to follow nature cannot be to combat truth d.

---

a This is πράξεως. Apocal. Plato uses the same way of speaking. πράξεως, says he, μοιάζει μοιάζει—μόνον μόνον μόνον πράξεως. The contrary to this is in Aristotle ἀληθῶς ἄρμαν ὑπὸ λόγου καὶ πράξεως; and οὐ βλέπει ἄλλως. And in S. B. *τά ἄλλα τά μέτωπα,* and ἀλήθεια ἀλήθεια. b Actum generalis verbum est, quae verba si quid agatur. Justin. Dig. c As it must be, because 'Οψιαν ή ἀλήθεια ἀλήθεια. d τὰ λόγιας θέντας καὶ πράξεις κατα φόνων ἐν κατα λόγω (that is, according to truth, which it is the office of reason to discover). Anton. *Nunquam aline natura, aline sapientia dicit.* Juvenal.

3. If there is a supreme being, upon whom the existence of the world depends; and nothing can be in it but what He either causes, or permits to be; then to own things to be as they are is to own what He causes, or at least permits, to be thus caused or permitted: and this is to take things as He gives them, to go into His constitution of the world, and to submit to His will, reveal in the books of nature*. To do this therefore must be agreeable to His will. And if so, the contrary must be disagreeable to it; and, since (as we shall find in due time) there is a perfect rectitude in His will, certainly wrong.

I desire that I may not be misunderstood in respect to the actings of wicked men. I do not say, it is agreeable to the will of God, that what is ill done by them, should be so done; i.e. that they should use their liberty ill: but I say, when they have done this and committed some evil, it is agreeable to His will, that we should allow it to have been committed: or, it would be disagreeable to His will, that we should deny it to have been committed.

As the owning of things, in all our conduct, to be as they are, is direct obedience: so the contrary, not to own things to be or to have been that are or have been, or not to be what they are, is direct rebellion against Him, who is the Author of nature. For it is as much as to say, "God indeed causes such a thing to be, or at least permits it, and it is; or the relation, that lies between this and that, is of such a nature, that one may be affirmed of the other, &c. this is true: but yet to me it shall not be so: I will not endure it, or act as if it were so: the laws of nature are ill framed, nor will I mind them, or what follows from them: even existence shall be non-existence, when my pleasures require". Such an impious declaration as this attends every voluntary infraction of truth.

4. Things cannot be denied to be what they are, in any instance or manner whatsoever, without contradicting axioms and truths eternal. For such are these: every thing is what it is; that which is done, cannot be undone; and the like. And then if these truths be considered as having always subsisted in the Divine mind, to which they have always been true, and which differs not from the Deity himself, to do this is to act not only in opposition to His government or sovereignty, but to His

---


b What Hierocles says of his ἢψαμοι Θεοί, is true in respect of every thing. Τὸ θείον νόμον κατακλυθέντας ἢκι—ταὐτον δὲ καὶ τὸν τύχην ἢ γνώσεως. There is a passage somewhere in S. Isagor. much like this: where it is said (as I remember) that he, who worships an Angel (as being what he is, the messenger of God) is not guilty of idolatry.
nature also: which, if He be perfect, and there be nothing in Him but what is most right, must also upon this account be most wrong.

Pardon these inadequate ways of speaking of God. You will apprehend my meaning: which perhaps may be better represented thus. If there are such things as axioms, which are and always have been immutably true, and consequently have always been known to God to be so, the truth of them cannot be denied any way, either directly or indirectly, but the truth of the Divine knowledge must be denied too.

5. Designedly to treat things as being what they are not is the greatest possible absurdity. It is to put bitter for sweet, darkness for light, crooked for straight, &c. It is to subvert all science, to renounce all sense of truth, and flatly to deny the existence of any thing. For nothing can be true, nothing does exist, if things are not what they are.

To talk to a post, or otherwise treat it as if it was a man, would surely be reckoned an absurdity, if not distraction. Why? because this is to treat it as being what it is not. And why should not the converse be reckoned as bad; that is, to treat a man as a post; as if he had no sense, and felt not injuries, which he doth feel; as if to him pain and sorrow were not pain; happiness not happiness. This is what the cruel and unjust often do.

Lastly, to deny things to be as they are is a transgression of the great law of our nature, the law of reason. For truth cannot be opposed, but reason must be violated. But of this more in the proper place.

Much might be added here concerning the amiable nature, and great force of truth. If I may judge by what I feel within my self, the least truth cannot be
contradicted without much reluctance: even to see other men disregard it
does something more than displease; it is shocking.

V. What has been said of acts inconsistent with truth, may also be said of many
omissions, or neglects to act: that is, by these also true propositions may be denied
to be true; and then those omissions, by which this is done, must be wrong for the
same reasons with those assigned under the former proposition.

Nothing can be asserted or denied by any act with regard to those things,
to which it bears no relation: and here no truth can be affected. And when
acts do bear such relations to other things, as to be declaratory of something
concerning them, this commonly is visible; and it is not difficult to determine,
whether truth suffers by them, or not. Some things cannot possibly be done,
but truth must be directly and positively denied; and the thing will be clear.
But the cases arising from omissions are not always so well determined, and plain:
it is not always easy to know when or how far truth is violated by omitting.
Here therefore more latitude must be allowed, and much must be left to every
one's own judgment and ingenuity.

This may be said in general, that when any truth would be denied by acting,
the omitting to act can deny no truth. For no truth can be contrary to truth.
And there may be omissions in other cases, that are silent as to truth. But yet
there are some neglects or refusals to act, which are manifestly inconsistent with
it (or, with some true propositions).

We before supposed A to have engaged not to do some certain thing, &c. if
now, on the other side, he should by some solemn promise, oath, or other act
undertake to do some certain thing before such a time, and he voluntarily omits
to do it, he would behave himself as if there had been no such promise or en-
gagement; which is equal to denying there was any: and truth is as much
contradicted in this as in the former instance.

Again, there are some ends, which the nature of things and truth require us
to aim at, and at which therefore if we do not aim, nature and truth are denied.
If a man does not desire to prevent evils, and to be happy, he denies both his
own nature and the nature and definition of happiness to be what they are. And
then further, willingly to neglect the means, leading to any such end, is the
same as not to propose that end, and must fall under the same censure. As
retreating from any end commonly attends the not advancing towards it, and
Of Moral Good and Evil.

that may be considered as an act, many omissions of this kind may be turned over to the other side, and brought under the foregoing proposition.

It must be confessed there is a difficulty as to the means, by which we are to consult our own preservation and happiness; to know what those are, and what they are with respect to us. For our abilities and opportunities are not equal: some labor under disadvantages invincible: and our ignorance of the true natures of things, of their operations and effects in such an irregular dis-tempered world, and of those many incidents, that may happen either to further or break our measures, deprive us of certainty in these matters. But still we may judge as well as we can, and do what we can; and the neglect to do this will be an omission within the reach of the proposition.

There are omissions of other kinds, which will deserve to be enumerated to these by being either total, or notorious, or upon the score of some other circumstance. It is certain I should not deny the Phænissæ of Euripides to be an excellent drama by not reading it: nor do I deny Chibil-menâr to be a rare piece of antiquity by not going to see it. But should I, having leisure, health, and proper opportunities, read nothing, nor make any inquiries in order to improve my mind, and attain such knowledge as may be useful to me, I should then deny my mind to be what it is, and that knowledge to be what it is. And if it doth not appear precisely, into what kind of studies this respect to truth will carry a man preferably to all others, how far it will oblige him to continue his pursuit after knowledge, and where the discontinuance begins to be no offence against truth, he must consult his own opportunities and genius, and judge for himself as well as he can. This is one of those cases which I said before were not so well determined.

If I give nothing to this or that poor body, to whom I am under no particular obligation, I do not by this deny them to be poor, any more than I should deny a man to have a squalid beard by not shaving him, to be nasty by not washing him, or to be lame by not taking him on my back.

Many things are here to be taken into consideration (according to the next proposition): perhaps I might intrench upon truth by doing this; and then I cannot by not doing it. But if I, being of ability to afford now and then something in charity to the poor, should yet never give them anything at all,

---

a In the Civil Law he is said to alt, who does omit. Qui non facit quod facere debet, videtur facere adversus ea qua non facit. Dig.  
b Est quodam prodere tenus. Hor.  
c Disse quamdiu vole: tamdiu ansem velle debitis, quondae, quantum proficias, non panitebis, says Cicero to his son.  
d Nulla virtus virtuti contraria est. Sen.
The Religion of Nature. Sect. I.

I should then certainly deny the condition of the poor to be what it is, and my own to be what it is: and thus truth would be injured. So, again,

If I should not say my prayers at such a certain hour, or in such a certain place and manner, this would not imply a denial of the existence of God, His providence, or my dependence upon Him: nay, there may be reasons perhaps against that particular time, place, manner. But if I should never pray to Him, or worship Him at all, such a total omission would be equivalent to this assertion, There is no God, who governs the world, to be adored: which, if there is such a being, must be contrary to truth. Also generally and notoriously to neglect this duty (permit me to call it so), tho not quite always, will favor, if not directly proclaim the same untruth. For certainly to worship God after this manner is only to worship him accidentally, which is to declare it a great accident that he is worship'd at all, and this approaches as near as it is possible to a total neglect. Beside, such a sparing and infrequent worshiper of the Deity betrays such an habitual disregard of Him, as will render every religious act insignificant and null.

Should I, in the last place, find a man grievously hurt by some accident, fallen down, alone, and without present help like to perish; or see his house on fire, no body being near to help, or call out: in this extremity if I do not give him my assistance immediately, I do not do it at all: and by this refusing to do it according to my ability, I deny his case to be what it is: human nature to be what it is: and even those desires and expectations, which I am conscious to my self I should have under the like misfortune, to be what they are.

VI. In order to judge rightly what any thing is, it must be considered not only what it is in itself or in one respect, but also what it may be in any other respect, which is capable of being denied by facts or practice: and the whole description of the thing ought to be taken in.

If a man steals a horse, and rides away upon him, he may be said indeed by riding him to use him as a horse, but not as the horse of another man, who gave him no licence to do this. He does not therefore consider him as being what he is, unless he takes in the respect he bears to his true owner. But it is not necessary perhaps to consider what he is in respect to his color, shape or age: because the thief's riding away with him may neither affirm nor deny him to be of any particular color, &c. I say therefore, that those, and all those properties, respects, and circumstances, which may be contradicted by practice, are to be taken into consideration. For otherwise the thing to be consider'd is but
Of Moral Good and Evil.

imperfectly survey'd; and the whole compass of it being not taken in, it is
taken not as being what it is, but as what it is in part only, and in other re-
spects perhaps as being what it is not.

If a rich man being upon a journey, should be robbed and strip't, it would
be a second robbery and injustice committed upon him to take from him part
of his then character, and to consider him only as a rich man. His charac-
ter completed is a rich man robbed and abused, and indeed at that time a poor
man a and distreft, tho' able to repay afterwards the assistance lent him.

Moreover a man in giving assistance of any kind to another should consider
what his own circumstances are, as well as what the others are b. If they do
not permit him to give it, he does not by his forbearance deny the other to
want it: but if he should give it, and by that deny his own or his family's
circumstances to be what they are, he would actually contradict truth. And
since (as I have observed already) all truths are consistent, nor can any thing
be true any further than it is compatible with other things that are true; when
both parties are placed in a right light, and the case properly stated for a judg-
ment, the latter may indeed be truly said to want assistance, but not the assistance
of the former: any more than a man, who wants a guide, may be said to want
a blind or a lame guide. By putting things thus may be truly known what
the latter is with respect to the former.

The case becomes more difficult, when a man (A) is under some promise or
compact to assist another (B), and at the same time bound to consult his own
happiness, provide for his family, &c. and he cannot do these, if he does that,
effectually. For what must A do? Here are not indeed opposite truths, but
there are truths on opposite fides. I answer: tho' there cannot be two incom-
patible duties, or tho' two inconsistent acts cannot be both A's duty at the
same time (for then his duty would be an impossibility); yet an obligation,
which I will call mixt, may arise out of those differing considerations. A should
assist B; but so, as not to neglect himself and family, &c. and so to take care
of himself and family, as not to forget the other engagement, as well and ho-
nestly as he can. Here the importance of the truths on the one and the other
side should be diligently compared: and there must in such cases be always
some exception or limitation understood. It is not in man's power to promise

a עליוּ לָמַּהְוַר: according to that determination in a case something like this, which occurs

b Utrique simul consulendum est. Dabo egentis, sed ut ipse non egeam, &c.

Sen. Ins et aliorum miserecat, ne sui alios miserecat. Plaut.

absolutely.
absolutely. He can only promise as one, who may be disabled by the weight and incumbency of truths not then existing.

I could here insert many instances of partial thinking, which occur in authors: but I shall choose only to set down one in the margin a.

In short, when things are truly estimated, persons concerned, times, places b, ends intended c, and effects that naturally follow, must be added to them.

VII. When any act would be wrong, the forbearing that act must be right: likewise when the omission of any thing would be wrong, the doing of it (i. e. not omitting it) must be right. Because contrariorium contraria est ratio.

VIII. Moral good and evil are coincident with right and wrong. For that cannot be good, which is wrong; nor that evil, which is right.

IX. Every act therefore of such a being, as is before described, and all those omissions which interfere with truth (i. e. deny any proposition to be true, which is true; or suppose any thing not to be what it is, in any regard d) are morally evil, in some degree or other: the forbearing such acts, and the acting in opposition to such omissions are morally good: and when anything may be either done, or not done, equally without the violation of truth, that thing is indifferent.

I would have it to be minded well, that when I speak of acts inconsistent with truth, I mean any truth; any true proposition whatsoever, whether containing matter of speculation, or plain fact. I would have every thing taken to be what is fact and truth it is e.

a Sextus Emp. seems to be fond of that filthy lying of Zeno, in relation to what is storied of Jocasta and Octavius: quo usque usque usque in mortem mortis rex regum, &c. any more, than to rub with the hand any other part of her, when in pain. Here only τρήσεως is considered; as if all was nothing more, but merely τρήσας; but this is an incomplete idea of the act. For τρήσεις & μορφαί is more than τρήσας by itself: and τρήσας & μορφαί & μορφαί is still more: and certainly τρήσας τον χιλιον την χιλιον is a different thing from τρήσας το μορφον το μορφον, &c. He might as well have said, that to rubared but piece of iron with one's bare hand is the same as to rub one that is cold, or any other innocent piece of matter: for all is but τρήσεις. Thus men, affecting to appear free-thinkers, flew themselves to be but half-thinkers, or least of they do not take in the whole of that which is to be considered.

Of Moral Good and Evil.

It may be of use also to remember, that I have added those words in some degree or other. For neither all evil, nor all good actions are equal. Those truths which they respect, tho they are equally true, may comprise matters of very different importance; or more truths may be violated one way than another: and then the crimes committed by the violation of them may be equally (one as well as the other) said to be crimes, but not equal crimes.

If A steals a book from B which was pleasing and useful to him, it is true A is guilty of a crime in not treating the book as being what it is, the book of B, who is the proprietor of it, and one whose happiness partly depends upon it: but still if A should deprive B of a good estate, of which he was the true owner, he would be guilty of a much greater crime. For if we suppose the book to be worth to him one pound, and the estate 10000l. that truth, which is violated by depriving B of his book, is in effect violated 10000 times by robbing him of his estate. It is the same as to repeat the theft of one pound 10000 times over: and therefore if 10000 thefts (or crimes) are more, and all together greater than one, one equal to 10000 must be greater too: greater than that, which is but the 10000th part of it, sure. Then, tho the convenience and innocent pleasure, that B found in the use of the book, was a degree of happiness: yet the happiness accruing to him from the estate, by which he was supplied not only with necessaries, but also with many other comforts and harmless enjoyments, vastly exceeded it. And therefore the truth violated in the former case was, B had a property in that, which gave him such a degree of happiness: that violated in the latter, B had a property in that, which gave him a happiness vastly superior to the other. The violation therefore in the latter case is upon this account a vastly greater violation than in the former. Lastly, the truths violated in the former case might end in B, those in the latter may perhaps be repeated in them of his family, who sub sist also by the estate, and

---

a Notwithstanding that paradox of the Stoics, 'Ori ὡν τὰ καταστάσεις, νῦν τὰ καταφύγματα, Ap. Cic. Plut. Diog. L. & al. which might easily be confuted from their own words in Cicero. For if finning be like passing a line, or limit; that is, going over or beyond that line: then, to sin being equal to going beyond that line, to go more (or farther) beyond that line must be to sin more. Who sees not the falfity of that, nec bono viro meliorem, — nec fori foriorem, nec sapienti sapientiorem posse fieri? And so on. Nullum inter seculos & erratum discrimen facere (as S. Hier. expreffes their opinion: if that epifile to Celanidia be his) is to alter or defroy the natures of things.

b Sure that Wifeman was but a bad accountant, who reckond, τὸ μάλιστα ἐπὶ νῦν ἀλλαχθείη, φραγμον μίαν θεολογικον. Ap. Plut.

c This is confeft in Cic. Illud intreff, quod in erro nostro, er adit injuria, semel peccatur: in patris vita violanda multa peccatur, &c. Multitudine peccatorum præfatur, &c.

d This may serve for an answer to Chryfippus, and them who Eyi, τοι ἀλλαι ἀλληδ ράθισκον ἰδίω τοιν, ὅτι θυσίαις θυσίαις τῶν ὅτι ἰσότατα ἰσότατος ὅτι ἰμάρτητος ἰμαρτηματὸς, &c. Ap. Diog. L.
are to be provided for out of it. And these truths are very many in respect of every one of them, and all their descendents. Thus the degrees of evil or guilt are as the importance and number of truths violated. I shall only add, on the other side, that the value of good actions will rise at least in proportion to the degrees of evil in the omission of them: and that therefore they cannot be equal, any more than the opposite evil omissions.

But let us return to that, which is our main subject, the distinction between moral good and evil. Some have been so wild as to deny there is any such thing: but from what has been said here, it is manifest, that there is as certainly moral good and evil as there is true and false; and that there is as natural and immutable a difference between those as between these, the difference at the bottom being indeed the same. Others acknowledge, that there is indeed moral good and evil; but they want some criterion, or mark, by the help of which they might know them asunder. And others there are, who pretend to have found that rule, by which our actions ought to be squared, and may be discriminated; or that ultimate end, to which they ought all to be referred: but what they have advanced is either false, or not sufficiently guarded, or not comprehensive enough, or not clear and firm, or (so far as it is just) reducible to my rule. For

They, who reckon nothing to be good but what they call bonestum, may denominate actions according as that is, or is not the cause or end of them: but then what is bonestum? Something is still wanting to measure things by, and to separate the bonestum from the inbonestum.

They who place all in following nature, if they mean by that phrase acting according to the natures of things (that is, treating things as being what they

---

\[a\] Quass paria esse feri placuit peccata, laborant Chon ventum ad verum est: sensus moreisque repugnant, Atque ipsa utilitas. Hor.  
\[b\] Therefore they, who denied there was either good or evil (videlicet quid aut quid) were much in the right to make thorough work, and to say there was nothing in nature either true or false. V. Sext. Emp. & Diog. L.  
\[c\] Quod [extremum, s. ultimum bonorum] omnium philosophorum fenentiis talis debet esse, ut ad id omnia referri oporteat: ipsam autem usquam. Cic.  
\[d\] There was among the old philosophers such an uncertainty and variety of opinions concerning the fines bonorum et malorum, that if Varro computes rightly, the number might be raised to 188. S. Aug.  
\[e\] Quod honestum est, id bonum solum habendum est. Cato ap. Cic.  
\[f\] Qui [omnes] permulta ob quamnam caulis facint—quia honestum est. Cic.  
\[g\] It is commonly placed among ends: and is considered as such in those ways of speaking; honestum esse proper esse expersandum. Cic. Finem bonorum esse honeste vivere, ib. and the like.  
\[h\] To say, Quod laudabile est, omne honestum est, or any thing like that, is to say nothing. For how shall one know what is truly laudabile?  
\[i\] Tιλακεν [κακωο] το εμπληκόμενος (al. ἀκολούθει) τῇ φωι τῷ ἑβραϊκῷ, ὅπως ἐστι κατ' ἀκρόν εὐφώνου. Ἐγὼ δὲ πρὸς τοὺς ἱπποταύρους ἔφοιτο. Diog. L.
Of Moral Good and Evil.

in nature are, or according to truth) say what is right. But this does not seem to be their meaning. And if it is only that a man must follow his own nature, since his nature is not purely rational, but there is a part of him, which he has in common with brutes, they appoint him a guide which I fear will mislead him, this being commonly more likely to prevail, than the rational part. At best this talk is loose.

They who make right reason to be the law, by which our acts are to be judged, and according to their conformity to this or deflexion from it call them lawful or unlawful, good or bad, say something more particular and precise. And indeed it is true, that whatever will bear to be tried by right reason, is right; and that which is condemned by it, wrong. And moreover, if by right reason is meant that which is found by the right use of our rational faculties, this is the same with truth: and what is said by them, will be comprehended in what I have said. But the manner in which they have deliverd themselves, is not yet explicit enough. It leaves room for so many disputes and opposite right-reasons, that nothing can be settled, while every one pretends that his reason is right. And beside, what I have said, extends farther: for we are not only to respect those truths, which we discover by reasoning, but even such matters of fact, as are fairly discovered to us by our senses. We ought to regard things as being what they are, which way ever we come to the knowledge of them.

They, who contenting themselves with superficial and transient views, deduce the difference between good and evil from the common sense of mankind, and certain principles that are born with us, put the matter upon a very infirm foot. For it is much to be suspected there are no such innate maxims as they pretend, but that the impressions of education are mistaken for them: and beside that, the sentiments of mankind are not so uniform and constant, as that we may safely trust such an important distinction upon them.

* Vivere ex hominis naturâ. Cic. It is true he adds, undique perfecâ & nihil requirent; but those words have either no meaning, or such as will not much mend the matter. For what is natura undique perfecâ & nihil requirent? Beside, moral religion doth not consist in following nature already perfect, but by the practice of religion we aim at the perfecting of our natures. b Celebrated everywhere.

  * To μοί εισα αυτίς ή σκεφίσθη παράδεδο, τις κατὰ μεθώρω σαρκώμαι λόγον, κε τις ποιησις ταυτατώς, άλλος με, ουκ έν τις γεγονότοις παράδεδοναι. And. Rh.

  * Nec fallunt in us & injuria a natura dijudicatur, fed omni ommia bene & turpia. Nam communis intelligencia nobis notat ires effici, eaque in animis nostris inchoavit, ut bene sem in virtute ponamur, in vitius turpia. Cic. Κριτών φασο [ε Χρόνιος] ένια καθόντος αμήνων, Diog. L.

  * They are usually called principia naturæ, lex (or leges) naturæ, prædiles, canon, or physiocal law, βάσις φυσικής, &c. The set of these practical principles (or a habit flowing from them) is, what, I think, goes by the name of Synteresis.

  * Unalquaque gens hoc legem naturæ potat, quod didicit. Hieron.

D 2. They,
They, who own nothing to be good but pleasure, or what they call jucundum, nothing evil but pain, and distinguish things by their tendencies to this or that, do not agree in what this pleasure is to be placed, or by what methods and actions the most of it may be obtained. These are left to be questions still. As men have different tastes, different degrees of sensé and philosophy, the same thing cannot be pleasant to all: and if particular actions are to be proved by this test, the morality of them will be very uncertain; the same act may be of one nature to one man, and of another to another. Beside, unless there be some strong limitation added as a fence for virtue, men will be apt to sink into gross voluptuounese, as in fact the generality of Epicurus's herd have done (notwithstanding all his talk of temperance, virtue, tranquillity of mind, &c.); and the bridle will be usurped by those appetites which it is a principal part of all religion, natural as well as any other, to curb and restrain. So these men say what is intelligible indeed: but what they say is false. For not all pleasures, but only such pleasure as is true, or happiness (of which afterwards), may be reckoned among the fines, or ultima bonorum.

He, who, having considered the two extremes in mens practice, in condemning both which the world generally agrees, places virtue in the middle, and seems to raise an idea of it from its situation at an equal distance from the opposite extremes,
Of Moral Good and Evil.

25
could only design to be understood of such virtues, as have extremes. It must
be granted indeed, that whatever declines in any degree toward either extreme,
must be so far wrong or evil; and therefore that, which equally (or nearly) di-
vides the distance, and declines neither way, must be right: also, that this notion
supplies us with a good direction for common use in many cases. But then there
are several obligations, that can by no means be derived from it: scarce more
than such, as respect the virtues couched under the word moderation. And even
as to these, it is many times difficult to discern, which is the middle point. This
the author himself was sensible of.

And when his master Plato makes virtue to consist in such a likeness to God,
as we are capable of (and God to be the great exemplar), he says what I shall
not dispute. But since he tells us not how or by what means we may attain
this likeness; we are little the wiser in point of practice: unless by it we un-
derstand the practice of truth, God being truth; and doing nothing contrary to it.

Whether any of those other foundations, upon which morality has been built,
will hold better than these mentioned, I much question. But if the formal ratio of
moral good and evil be made to consist in a conformity of men acts to the truth
of the case or the contrary, as I have here explained it, the distinction seems to be
settled in a manner undeniable, intelligible, practicable. For as what is meant
by a true proposition and matter of fact is perfectly understood by every body; so
will it be easy for any one, so far as he knows any such propositions and facts, to
compare not only words, but also actions with them. A very little skill and attention
will serve to interpret even these, and discover whether they speak truth, or not.

X. If there be moral good and evil, distinguished as before, there is religion; and
such as may most properly be styled natural. By religion I mean nothing else but an
obligation to do (under which word I comprehend acts both of body and mind.
I say, to do) what ought not to be omitted, and to forbear what ought not to be

a When he says, it must be taken ὅτι οἱ ὑπὸ τῆς ἀληθείας προσάρξιν, it is not by that ascertained.
See before.

b ὥσπερ μὲν διὸ τοῦτο τοῦ ἀληθείας τὸν ρήματος, οὐ καὶ τοῦτο, &c. Therefore R. Albo might have spared
that censure, where he blames him for expressing himself too generally, when he says, ἡ ἀληθεία
καὶ ὁ ἄλλος ὄργανος τῆς ἀληθείας, ἡ ἀληθεία ἰδιαίτερα, ἡ ἀληθεία ἐστὶν ἡ ὑπὸ τῆς ἀληθείας ἐμφάνισθαι ἦδον.
And in another place, our φανερωμένος ἐστὶν ἐμφανισθέντας ἢ τὸν ἀληθείας ἐμφανισθέντας ἦδον. Εἰκὸς.
That man, says he, cannot be neglected, who endeavours ἄλλοτρο ἔσομαι, ἡ ἐπωνύμων ἀληθεία, ἐν ἑστὶν ἐσοφάν,
τοῦ ἐμφανισθέντα ἐμφανισθέντας ἦδον. And in another place, our φανερωμένος ἐστὶν ἐμφανισθέντας ἢ τὸν ἀληθείας
St. Augutin seems to agree with him, in that sentence of his, Religionis summa est imitari quem colis.

This is certainly not that difficulty or perplexity in morality, which Cicero seems to suppose, when he says,
Confessitudo exercitatioque capienda, ut boni ratiocinatorum officiorum esse possint.
The Religion of Nature.

Sect. I.

done. So that there must be religion, if there are things, of which some ought not to be done, some not to be omitted. But that there are such, appears from what has been said concerning moral good and evil: because that, which to omit would be evil, and which therefore being done would be good or well done, ought certainly by the terms to be done; and so that, which being done would be evil, and implies such absurdities and rebellion against the supreme being, as are mentioned under proposition the IVth. ought most undoubtedly not to be done. And then since there is religion, which follows from the distinction between moral good and evil; since this distinction is founded in the respect, which mens acts bear to truth; and since no proposition can be true, which expresses things otherwise than as they are in nature: since things are so, there must be religion, which is founded in nature, and may upon that account be most properly and truly called the religion of nature or natural religion; the great law of which religion, the law of nature, or rather (as we shall afterwards find reason to call it) of the Author of nature is,

XI. That every intelligent, active, and free being should so behave himself, as by no act to contradict truth; or, that he should treat everything as being what it is.

Objections I am sensible may be made to almost any thing; but I believe none to what has been here advanced but such as may be answered. For to consider a thing as being something else than what it is, or (which is the same) not to consider it as being what it is, is an absurdity indefensible. However, for a specimen, I will set down a few. Let us suppose some gentleman, who has not sufficiently considered these matters, amidst his freedoms, and in the gaiety of humor, to talk after some such manner as this. “If every thing must be treated as being what it is, what rare work will follow? For, 1. to treat my enemy as such is to kill him, or revenge my self soundly upon him. 2. To use a creditor, who is a spend-thrift, or one that knows not the use of money, or has no occasion for it, as such, is not to pay him. Nay further, 3. If I want money, don’t I act according to truth, if I take it from some body else to supply my own wants? And more, do not I act contrary to truth, if I do not? 4. If one, who plainly appears to have a design of killing another, or doing him some great mischief, if he can find him, should ask me where he is, and I know where he is, may not I, to save life, say I do not know, tho that be false? 5. At this rate I may not, in a frolick, break a glass, or burn a book: because forsooth to use these things as being what they are,

a What it is in nature. אַחֲרֵי יָמִיםֹת, to use Maim.‘s words. And thus that in Ariannus is true, Νόμις βιανάβικες είπι φαί, to ἀποδέχον τί φασύ πρεσβίτης. Omni in re quid sit veri, videre & sueri deset. Cic. This is indeed the way of truth.  b Because there is scarce any thing, which one or other will not lay. Quid enim potest dici de illa, quainquam dixit esse nivem, &c. Lact. are,
Of Moral Good and Evil.

“are, is to drink out of the one, not to break it; and to read the other, not "burn it. Lastly, how shall a man know what is true: and if he can find out "truth, may he not want the power of acting agreeably to it?"

To the first objection it is easy to reply from what has been already said. For if the objector’s enemy, whom we will call E, was nothing more than his enemy, there might be some force in the objection; but since he may be considered as something else beside that, he must be used according to what he is in other respects, as well as in that from which he is denominated the objector’s (or O’s) enemy. For E in the first place is a man; and as such may claim the benefit of common humanity, whatever that is: and if O denies it to him, he wounds truth in a very sensible part. And then if O and E are fellow-citizens, living under the same government, and subject to laws, which are so many common covenants, limiting the behaviour of one man to another, and by which E is exempt from all private violence in his body, estate, &c. O cannot treat E as being what he is, unless he treats him also as one, who by common consent is under such a protection. If he does otherwise, he denies the existence of the foresaid laws and public compacts: contrary to truth. And beside, O should act with respect to himself as being what he is, a man himself, in such or such circumstances, and one who has given up all right to private revenge (for that is the thing meant here). If truth therefore be observed, the result will be this. O must treat E as something compounded of a man, a fellow-citizen, and an enemy, all three: that is, he must only prosecute him in such a way, as is agreeable to the statutes and methods, which the society have obliged themselves to observe. And even as to legal prosecutions, there may be many things still to be considered. For E may shew himself an enemy to O in things, that fall under the cognizance of law, which yet may be of moment and importance to him, or not. If they are such things, as really affect the safety or happiness of O or his family, then he will find himself obliged, in duty and submission to truth, to take refuge in the laws; and to punish E, or obtain satisfaction, and at least security for the future, by the means there prescribed. Because if he does not, he denies the nature and sense of happiness to be what they are; the obligations, which perhaps we shall shew hereafter he is under to his family*, to be what they are; a dangerous and wicked enemy to be dangerous and wicked; the end of laws, and society itself, to be the safety and good of its members, by preventing injuries, punishing offenders, &c.

*Conveniet cum in dando munificum esse, tum in exigendo non acerbum: — a litibus vero quaesi- lum liceat, & necio an paulo plus etiam quam liceat, abhorrentem. — Habenda est autem ratio rei familiaris, quam quidem dilabi sine flagitisum est. Cic.

which
which it will appear to be, when that matter comes before us. But if the enmity of E rises not beyond trifling, or more tolerable instances, then O might act against truth, if he should be at more charge or hazard in prosecuting E than he can afford, or the thing lost or in danger is worth: should treat one that is an enemy in little things, or a little enemy, as a great one; or should deny to make some allowances, and forgive such peccadillo's, as the common frailty of human nature makes it necessary for us mutually to forgive, if we will live together. Lastly, in cases, of which the laws of the place take no notice, truth and nature would be sufficiently observed, if O should keep a vigilant eye upon the steps of his adversary, and take the most prudent measures, that are compatible with the character of a private person, either to avert the malice of E, or prevent the effects of it; or perhaps, if he should only not use him as a friend. For this if he should do, notwithstanding the rants of some men, he would cancel the natural differences of things, and confound truth with untruth.

The debtor in the second objection, if he acts as he says there, does, in the first place, make himself the judge of his creditor, which is what he is not. For he lays him under a heavy sentence, an incapacity in effect of having any estate, or any more estate. In the next place, he arrogates to himself more than can be true: that he perfectly knows, not only what his creditor and his circumstances are, but also what they ever will be hereafter. He that is now weak, or extravagant, or very rich, may for ought he knows become otherwise. And, which is to be considered above all, he directly denies the money, which is the creditor's, to be the creditor's. For it is supposed to be owing or due to him (otherwise he is no creditor): and if it be due to him, he has a right to it: and if he has a right to it, of right it is his (or, it is his). But the debtor by detaining it uses it, as if it was his own, and therefore not the other's; contrary to truth. To pay a man what is due to him doth not deny, that he who pays may think him extravagant, &c. or any other truth; that act has no such signification. It only signifies, that he who pays thinks it due to the other, or that it is his: and this it naturally doth signify. For he might pay the creditor without having any other thought relating to him, but would not without this.

Ans. to objection the 3d. Acting according to truth, as that phrase is used in the objection, is not the thing required by my rule; but, to act that no truth may be denied by any act. Not taking from another man his money by violence is a forbearance, which does not signify, that I do not want money, or which denies any truth. But taking it denies that to be his, which (by the supposition)
is bis. The former is only as it were silence, which denies nothing: the latter a direct and loud assertion of a falsity; the former what can contradict no truth, because the latter does. If a man wants money through his own extravagance and vice, there can be no pretence for making another man to pay for his wickedness or folly. We will suppose therefore the man, who wants money, to want it for necessaries, and to have incurred this want through some misfortune, which he could not prevent. In this case, which is put as strong as can be for the objector, there are ways of expressing this want, or acting according to it, without trespassing upon truth. The man may by honest labor and industry seek to supply his wants; or he may apply as a suppliant, not as an enemy or robber, to such as can afford to relieve him; or if his want is very pressing, to the first persons he meets, whom truth will oblige to assist him according to their abilities: or he may do any thing but violate truth; which is a privilege of a vast scope, and leaves him many resources. And such a behaviour as this is not only agreeable to his case, and expressive of it in a way that is natural; but he would deny it to be what it is, if he did not act thus. If there is no way in the world, by which he may help himself without the violation of truth (which can scarce be supposed. If there is no other way) he must e'en take it as his fate. Truth will be truth, and must retain its character and force, let his case be what it will. Many things might be added. The man, from whom this money is to be taken, will be proved fact. vi. to have a right to defend himself and his, and not suffer it to be taken from him; perhaps he may stand as much in need of it, as the other, &c.

An. to obj. the 4th. It is certain, in the first place, that nothing may willingly be done, which in any manner promotes murder: whoever is accessory to that, offends against many truths of great weight. 2. You are not obliged to answer the furiosus's question. Silence here would contradict no truth. 3. No one can tell, in strict speaking, where another is, if he is not within his view. Therefore you may truly deny, that you know where the man is. Lastly, if by not discovering him you should endanger your life (and this is the hardest circumstance, that can be taken into the objection), the case then would be the same, as if the inquisitor should say, "If you do not murder such a one, I will murder you." And then be sure you must not commit murder; but must defend your self against this, as against other dangers, against Banditi, &c. as well as you can. Tho' merely to deny truth by words (I mean, when they
The Religion of Nature. Sect. I.

are not productive of facts to follow; as in judicial transactions, bearing witnesses, or passing sentence) is not equal to a denial by facts; tho an abuse of language is allowable in this case, if ever in any; tho all sins against truth are not equal, and certainly a little trespassing upon it in the present case, for the good of all parties, as little a one as any; and tho one might look on a man in such a fit of rage as mad, and therefore talk to him not as a man but a mad man: yet truth is sacred, and there are other ways of coming off with innocence, by giving timely notice to the man in danger, calling in assistance, or taking the advantage of some reasonable incident.

The 5th objection seems to respect inanimate things, which if we must treat according to what they are, it is insinuated we shall become obnoxious to many trifling obligations; such as are there mentioned. To this I answer thus. If the glass be nothing else but an useful drinking-glass, and these words fully express what it is, to treat it accordingly is indeed to drink out of it, when there is occasion and it is truly useful, and to break it designably is to do what is wrong. For that is to handle it, as if it neither was useful to the objector himself, nor could be so to any one else; contrary to the description of it. But if there be any reason for breaking the glass, then something is wanting to declare fully what it is. As, if the glass be poifond: for then it becomes a poifond drinking-glass, and to break or destroy it is to use it according to this true description of it. Or if by breaking it any thing is to be obtained, which more than counterbalances the loss of it, it becomes a glass with that circumstance: and then for the objector to break it, if it be his own, is to use it according to what it is. And if it should become by some circumstance useless only, tho there should be no reason for breaking it, yet if there be none against it, the thing will be indifferent and matter of liberty. This answer, mutatis mutandis, may be adapted to other things of this kind; books, or any thing else. As the usefulness or excellence of some books renders them worthy of immortality, and of all our care to secure them to posterity; so some may be used more like what they are, by tearing or burning them.

* Eutv εἰς ἰθήκην νοστικὰ ἔχασαρν. — ζ διόν ἦδεν. Max. Tyr.

** Eutv εἰς ἰθήκην νοστικὰ ἔχασαρν. — ζ διόν ἦδεν. Max. Tyr.

b To that question, Si quis ad te conjugiam, qui mendacium tuo poftiit a morte liberari, non es mentiturus? S. Auflin answers in the negative, and concludes, Refut ut nunquam boni mentientur. — Quanto fortissim, quanto excellentissimi dices, nec probam, nec mentiar.

c In such pressing cases, under imminent danger, the world is wont to make great allowances. Obv. εἰς οὐκετίν αἰνέα τὸν χαίροντι λόγῳ. — Ovs. εἰς σοφοβαίνειν ὁχί. Even they, who say, λήγει τὸν ἔναν τὸν ὄντα, διά τὸν εἰποτικὸν ὄντα, λήγει τὸν εἰποτικὸν ὄντα, διά τὸν εἰποτικὸν ὄντα. S. Harell (εἰς al. præf.). And Ab. Ezra says of Abraham, Ῥήμα ἀναλωτίκης καὶ ἀναλωτίκης εἰς τὸ τρόπον ὑμᾶς. Sext. Pythag. In short, some have permitted, in desperate cases, mendacio tanquam veneno uti. S. Harell.


6 Who doth not detest that thought of Caligula de Homeri carminibus abolendis, &c? Suet.
Of Moral Good and Evil.

than by preserving or reading them: the number of which, large enough already, I wish you may not think to be increased by this, which I here send you.

Here two things ought to be regarded. 1. That tho to act against truth in any case is wrong, yet, the degrees of guilt varying with the importance of things, in some cases the importance one way or t'other may be so little as to render the crime evanescent or almost nothing. And, 2. that inanimate beings cannot be considered as capable of wrong treatment, if the respect they bear to living beings is separated from them. The drinking-glass before mentioned could not be considered as such, or be what it now is, if there was no drinking animal to own and use it. Nothing can be of any importance to that thing itself, which is void of all life and perception. So that when we compute what such things are, we must take them as being what they are in reference to things that have life.

The last and most material objection, or question rather, shall be answered by and by. In the mean time I shall only say, that if in any particular case truth is inaccessible, and after due inquiry it doth not appear what, or how things are, then this will be true, that the case or thing under consideration is doubtful: and to act agreeably unto this truth is to be not opinionative, nor obstinate, but modest, cautious, docile, and to endeavour to be on the safer side. Such behaviour shews the case to be as it is. And as to the want of power to act agreeably to truth, that cannot be known till trials are made: and if any one doth try, and do his endeavour, he may take to himself the satisfaction, which he will find in sect. IV.

Sect. II. Of Happiness.

That, which demands to be next considerd, is happiness: as being in itself most considerable, as abetting the cause of truth; and as being indeed so nearly allied to it, that they cannot well be parted. We cannot pay the respects due to one, unless we regard the other. Happiness must not be denied to be what it is: and it is by the practice of truth that we aim at that happiness, which is true.

In the few following propositions I shall not only give you my idea of it, but also subjoin some observations, which tho perhaps not necessary here, we may sometime hereafter think no loss of time or labor to have made en passant: such as

1. The Stoics must certainly therefore be much too scrupulous, when they affirm (if they were in earnest), that ηδί τε λάτουλον ὡς ζυζκι παλατίῳ τῷ σαφῇ ὁ λόγος ἑνιστρέφεται. Clem. Alex. Especially since this is, at least ordinarily, a thing perfectly indifferent by pr. ix.

E 2
men of science would call, some of them porifmata, or corollaries, and some scholia, I shall take them as they fall in my way promiscuously.

I. Pleasure is a consciousness of something agreeable, pain of the contrary: &c. v. v. the consciousness of anything agreeable is pleasure, of the contrary pain. For as nothing, that is agreeable to us, can be painful at the same time, and as such; nor any thing disagreeable pleafant, by the terms; so neither can any thing agreeable be for that reason (because it is agreeable) not pleasent, nor any thing disagreeable not painful, in some measure or other.

Obs. 1. Pleasures and pains are proportionable to the perceptions and sense of their subjects, or the persons affected with them. For consciousness and perception cannot be separated; because as I do not perceive what I am not conscious to myself, I do perceive, so neither can I be conscious of what I do not perceive, or of more or less than what I do perceive. And therefore, since the degrees of pleasure or pain must be answerable to the consciousness, which the party affected has of them, they must likewise be as the degrees of perception are.

Obs. 2. Whatever increases the power of perceiving, renders the perciepent more susceptible of pleasure or pain. This is an immediate consequence; and to add more is needless: unless, that among the means, by which perceptions and the inward sense of things may in many cases be heightend and increased, the principal are reflection, and the practice of thinking. As I cannot be conscious of what I do not perceive: so I do not perceive that, which I do not advert upon. That which makes me feel, makes me advert. Every instance therefore of consciousness and perception is attended with an act of advertence: and as the more the perceptions are, the more are the advertences or reflections; so v. v. the more frequent or intense the acts of advertence and reflection are, the more consciousness there is, and the stronger is the perception. Further, all perceptions are produced in time: time passes by moments: there can be but one moment present at once: and therefore all present perception consider'd without any relation to what is past, or future, may be look'd upon as momentaneous only. In this kind of perception the perciepent perceives, as if he had not perceived any thing before, nor had any thing perceptible to follow. But in reflection there is a repetition of what is past, and an anticipation of that which is apprehended as yet to come: there is a connexion of past and future, which by this are brought into the sum, and superadded to the present or momentaneous perceptions. Again, by reflecting we practise our capacity of apprehending: and this practising will increase, and as it were extend that capacity, to a certain degree. Lastly, reflection doth.
Of Happiness.

33
doth not only accumulate moments past and future to those that are present, but even in their passage it seems to multiply them. For time, as well as space, is capable of indeterminate division: and the finer or nicer the advertence or reflexion is, into the more parts is the time divided; which, whilst the mind considers those parts as so many several moments, is in effect rendered by this so much the longer. And to this experience agrees.

Obs. 3. The causes of pleasure and pain are relative things: and in order to estimate truly their effect upon any particular subject they ought to be drawn into the degrees of perception in that subject. When the cause is of the same kind, and acts with an equal force, if the perception of one person be equal to that of another, what they perceive must needs be equal. And so it will be likewise, when the forces in the producing causes and the degrees of perception in the sentient are reciprocal. For (which doth not seem to be considered by the world, and therefore ought the more particularly to be noted) if the cause of pleasure or pain should act but half as much upon A, as it does upon B; yet if the perceptivity of A be double to that of B, the sum of their pleasures or pains will be equal. In other cases they will be unequal. As, if the causa dolorisca should act with the same impetus on C with which it acts upon D; yet if C had only two degrees of perception, and D had three, the pain sustainea by D would be half as much more as that of C: because he would perceive or feel the acts and impressions of the cause more by so much. If it should act with twice the force upon D which it acts with upon C, then the pain of C would be to that of D as 2 to 6: i.e. as one degree of force multiplied by two degrees of perception to two degrees of force multiplied by three of perception. And so on.

Obs. 4. Mens respective happinesses or pleasures ought to be valued as they are to the persons themselves, whose they are; or according to the thoughts and sense, which they have of them: not according to the estimate put upon them by other people, who have no authority to judge of them, nor can know what they are; may compute by different rules; have less sense; be in different circumstances; or such as guilt has rendered partial to themselves. If that prince, who having plenty and flocks many, yet ravished the poor man's single ewe-lamb out of his bosom, reckoned the poor man's loss to be not greater, than the loss of one of his lambs would have been to him, he must be very defective in moral arithmetic, and little understood the doctrine of proportion. Every

* De se hic sc, aliter sentias. Ter.
man's happiness is his happiness, what it is to him; and the loss of it is answerable to the degrees of his perception, to his manner of taking things, to his wants and circumstances.

Obs. 5. How judicious and wary ought princes, lawgivers, judges, juries, and even masters to be! They ought not to consider so much what a f Stout, resolute, obstinate, hardening criminal may bear, as what the weaker fort, or at least (if that can be known) the persons immediately concerned can bear: that is, what any punishment would be to them. For it is certain, all criminals are not of the former kind, and therefore should not be used as if they were. Some are drawn into crimes, which may render them obnoxious to public justice, they scarce know how themselves: some fall into them through necessity, strength of temptation, despair, elasticity of spirits and a sudden eruption of passion, ignorance of laws, want of good education, or some natural infirmity or propension, and some who are really innocent, are oppressed by the iniquity or mistakes of judges, witnesses, juries, or perhaps by the power and zeal of a faction, with which their senses or their honesty has not permitted them to join. What a difference must there be between the sufferings of a poor wretch sensible of his crime or misfortune, who would give a world for his deliverance, if he had it, and those of a sturdy veteran in ruggery: between the apprehensions, tears, faintings of the one, and the brandy and oaths of the other; in short, between a tender nature and a brickbat!

Obs. 6. In general, all persons ought to be very careful and tender, where any other is concerned. Otherwise they may do they know not what. For no man can tell by himself, or any other way, how another may be affected.

Obs. 7. There cannot be an equal distribution of rewards and punishments by any stated human laws. Because (among other reasons) the same thing is rarely either the same gratification, or the same punishment to different persons.

Obs. 8. The sufferings of brutes are not like the sufferings of men. They perceive by moments, without reflexion upon past or future, upon causes, circumstances, &c.

Time and life without thinking are next neighbours to nothing, to no-time and no-life. And therefore to kill a brute is to deprive him of a life, or a remain-

---

a Felicitas cui praepiuia fuerit homini, non e[ in humani judicis: cibum propterisatem ipsum alias alio modo, &c] sape ingenio quisque terminet. Pliny.

Of Happiness.
der of time, that is equal to little more than nothing: tho this may perhaps be
more applicable to some animals than to others. That, which is chiefly to be
taken care of in this matter, is, that the brute may not be killed unnecessarily;
when it is killed, that it may have as few moments of pain as may be; and that
no young be left to languish. So much by the way here.

II. Pain considered in itself is a real evil, pleasure a real good. I take this as a
postulatum, that will without difficulty be granted. Therefore,

III. By the general idea of good and evil the one [pleasure] is in itself desirable, the
other [pain] to be avoided. What is here said, respects mere pleasure and pain, ab-
tracted from all circumstances, consequences, &c. But because there are some of
these generally adhering to them, and such as enter so deep into their nature, that
unles these be taken in, the full and true character of the other cannot be had, nor
can it therefore be known what happiness is, I must proceed to some other propo-
sitions relating to this subject.

IV. Pleasure compared with pain may either be equal, or more, or less: also plea-
sures may be compared with other pleasures b, and pains with pains. Because all the
moments of the pleasure must bear some respect or be in some ratio to all the mo-
mements of pain: as also all the degrees of one to all the degrees of the other: and
so must thofe of one pleasure, or one pain, be to thofe of another. And if the
degrees of intenseness be multiplied by the moments of duration, there must still
be some ratio of the one product to the other.

That this proposition is true, appears from the general conduct of mankind;
tho in some particulars they may err, and wrong themselves, some more, some
less. For what doth all this hurry of business, what do all the labors and tra-
vels of men tend to, but to gain such advantages, as they think do exceed all their
trouble? What are all their abstinences and self-denials for, if they do not think
some pleasures less than the pain, that would succeed them? Do not the various
methods of life shew, that men prefer one fort of pleasure to another, and sub-
mitt to one fort of pain rather than to have another? And within our selves we
cannot but find an indifference as to many things, not caring, whether we have the


b. The rants of thofe men, who affer, μὴ ἐμφανίζων ἐκδίκησιν ἐνδοῦ, μηδέ ἐνδοῦ τι ἔσει:
nay, φοβῶν οὐδὲν ἐπικρίνεται, ἔπειτα, ap. Diog. L. can freely affect no body, who has fene, or is alive. Nor
that of the Stoics in Plut. ὅτι ἀγαθὸν ἢ χρῆσθαι ἢ ἐχθρομαυνώμεθα, κ.τ.λ. As if an age was not
more than a moment, and (therefore) an age's happiness more than a moment's.
pain with the pleasure obtained by it, or mifs the pleasure, being excused from the pain.

V. When pleasures and pains are equal, they mutually destroy each other: when the one exceeds, the excess gives the true quantity of pleasure or pain. For nine degrees of pleasure, less by nine degrees of pain, are equal to nothing: but nine degrees of one, less by three degrees of the other, give six of the former net and true.

VI. As therefore there may be true pleasure and pain: so there may be some pleasures, which compared with what attends or follows them, not only may vanish into nothing, but may even degenerate into pain, and ought to be reckoned as pains; and v. v. some pains, that may be annumerated to pleasures. For the true quantity of pleasure differs not from that quantity of true pleasure; or it is so much of that kind of pleasure, which is true (clear of all discounts and future payments): nor can the true quantity of pain not be the same with that quantity of true or mere pain. Then, the man who enjoys three degrees of such pleasure as will bring upon him nine degrees of pain, when three degrees of pain are set off to balance and sink the three of pleasure, can have remaining to him only six degrees of pain: and into these therefore is his pleasure finally resolved. And so the three degrees of pain, which any one indures to obtain nine of pleasure, end in six of the latter. By the same manner of computing some pleasures will be found to be the loss of pleasure, compared with greater: and some pains the alleviation of pain; because by undergoing them greater are evaded. Thus the natures of pleasures and pains are varied, and sometimes transmuted: which ought never to be forgot.

Nor this neither. As in the sense of most men, I believe, a little pain will weigh against a great deal of pleasure; so perhaps there may be some pains, which exceed all pleasures; that is, such pains as no man would choose to suffer for any pleasure whatever, or at least any that we know of in this world. So that it is possible the difference, or excess of pain, may rise so high as to become immense: and then the pleasure to be set against that pain will be but a point, or cypher; a quantity of no value.

VII. Happiness differs not from the true quantity of pleasure, unhappiness of pain. Or, any being may be said to be so far happy, as his pleasures are true, &c. That cannot

---

*a Nocet (fit noxa) ompta dolore voluptas. Hor. And—mutila corrupta dolore voluptas. Id. b Ag when that Pompey mentioned by Val. Max. by burning his finger escaped the torture. c Bona malis paria non sunt, etiam pari numero: nec lascivia sula minimo marnore penfanda. Plin.
be the happiness of any being, which is bad for him: nor can happiness be disagreeable. It must be something therefore, that is both agreeable and good for the possessor. Now present pleasure is for the present indeed agreeable; but if it be not true, and he who enjoys it must pay more for it than it is worth, it cannot be for his good, or good for him. This therefore cannot be his happiness. Nor, again, can that pleasure be reckoned happiness, for which one pays the full price in pain: because these are quantities which mutually destroy each other. But yet since happiness is something, which, by the general idea of it, must be desirable, and therefore agreeable, it must be some kind of pleasure: and this, from what has been said, can only be such pleasure as is true. That only can be both agreeable and good for him. And thus every one's happiness will be as his true quantity of pleasure.

One, that loves to make objections, may demand here, whether there may not be happiness without pleasure: whether a man may not be said to be happy in respect to those evils, which he escapes, and yet knows nothing of: and whether there may not be such a thing as negative happiness. I answer, an exemption from misfortunes and pains is a high privilege, tho' we should not be sensible what those misfortunes or dangers are, from which we are delivered, and in the larger use of the word may be styled a happiness. Also, the absence of pain or unhappiness may perhaps be called negative happiness, since the meaning of that phrase is known. But in proper speaking happiness always includes something positive. For mere indolence resulting from insensibility, or joined with it, if it be happiness, is a happiness infinitely diminished: that is, it is no more a happiness, than it is an unhappiness; upon the confines of both, but neither. At best it is but the happiness of stocks and stones: and to these I think happiness can hardly be in strictness allowed. 'Tis the privilege of a stock to be what it is, rather than to be a miserable being: this we are sensible of; and therefore, joining this privilege with our own sense of it, we call it happiness; but this is what it is in our manner of apprehending it, not what it is in the stock itself. A sense indeed of being free from pains and troubles is attended with happiness: but then the happiness flows from the sense of the case, and is a positive happiness. Whilst a man reflects upon his negative happiness, as it is called, and enjoys it, he makes it positive: and perhaps a sense of immunity from the afflictions and miseries every where so obvious to our observation is one of the greatest pleasures in this world.

\[a\] Of εὐογίαν δὲ ἐγώ ἡ ἡγομένη παραμερισμένη σῷ εὐτυχίᾳ. Arist.
\[b\] Of ὡς καθευδόντες κατάφωσιν. Arist. ap. Diog. L.

F VIII. Thos.
VIII. That being may be said to be ultimately happy, in some degree or other, the sum total of whose pleasures exceeds the sum of all his pains: or, ultimate happiness is the sum of happiness, or true pleasure, at the foot of the account. And so on the other side, that being may be said to be ultimately unhappy, the sum of all whose pains exceeds that of all his pleasures.

IX. To make itself happy is a duty, which every being, in proportion to its capacity, owes to itself; and that, which every intelligent being may be supposed to aim at, in general. For happiness is some quantity of true pleasure: and that pleasure, which I call true, may be considered by itself, and so will be justly desirable (according to prop. II, and III). On the contrary, unhappiness is certainly to be avoided: because being a quantity of mere pain, it may be considered by itself, as a real, mere evil, &c. and because if I am obliged to pursue happiness, I am at the same time obliged to recede, as far as I can, from its contrary. All this is self-evident. And hence it follows, that,

X. We cannot act with respect to either our selves, or other men, as being what we and they are, unless both are considered as beings susceptible of happiness and unhappiness, and naturally desirous of the one and averse to the other. Other animals may be considered after the same manner in proportion to their several degrees of apprehension.

But that the nature of happiness, and the road to it, which is so very apt to be mistaken, may be better understood; and true pleasures more certainly distinguished from false; the following propositions must still be added.

XI. As the true and ultimate happiness of no being can be produced by any thing, that interferes with truth, and denies the natures of things: so neither can the practice of truth make any being ultimately unhappy. For that, which contradicts nature and truth, opposes the will of the Author of nature (whose existence, &c. I shall prove afterwards); and to suppose, that an inferior being may in opposition to His will break through the constitution of things, and by so doing make himself happy, is to suppose that being more potent than the Author of nature, and consequently more potent than the author of the nature and power of that very being himself, which is absurd. And as to the other part of the proposition, it is also absurd to think, that, by the constitution of nature and will of its author,

---

*This is truly Bonum summum, quod tendimus omnes. Lucr. Ἀπαντα μὴ ὡς ἰππί, ἴτιγν ἡμῶν αἰ-
τέριν, πινο ἄθαματος τίς τις ὡς αὐτῷ. Arist.*
any being should be finally miserable only for conforming himself to truth, and owning things and the relations lying between them to be what they are. It is much the same as to say, God has made it natural to contradict nature; or unnatural, and therefore punishable, to act according to nature and reality. If such a blunder (excuse the boldness of the word) could be, it must come either through a defect of power in Him to cause a better and more equitable scheme, or from some delight, which he finds in the misery of his dependents. The former cannot be ascribed to the First cause, who is the fountain of power: nor the latter to Him, who gives so many proofs of his goodness and beneficence. Many beings may be said to be happy; and there are none of us all, who have not many enjoyments: whereas did he delight in the infelicity of those beings, which depend upon Him, it must be natural to Him to make them unhappy, and then not one of them would be otherwise in any respect. The world in that case instead of being such a beautiful, admirable system, in which there is only a mixture of evils, could have been only a scene of mere misery, horror, and torment.

That either the enemies of truth (wicked men) should be ultimately happy, or the religious observers of it (good men) ultimately unhappy, is such injustice, and an evil so great, that sure no Manichean will allow such a superiority of his evil principle over the good, as is requisite to produce and maintain it.

XII. The genuine happiness of every being must be something, that is not incompatible with or destructive of its nature, or the superior or better part of it, if it be mixt. For instance, nothing can be the true happiness of a rational being, that is inconsistent with reason. For all pleasure, and therefore be sure all clear pleasure and true happiness must be something agreeable (pr. I.): and nothing can be agreeable to a reasoning nature, or (which is the same) to the reason of that nature, which is repugnant and disagreeable to reason. If any thing becomes agreeable to a rational being, which is not agreeable to reason, it is plain his reason is lost, his nature deprav'd, and that he now lifts himself among irrationals, at least as to that particular. If a being finds pleasure in any thing unreasonable, he has an unreasonable pleasure; but a rational nature can like nothing of that kind without a contradiction to itself. For to do this would be to act, as if it was the contrary to what it is. Lastly, if we find hereafter, that whatever interferes with reason, interferes with truth, and to contradict either of them is the same thing; then what has been said under the former proposition, does also confirm this: as what has been said in proof of this, does also confirm the former.

---

*a Non das Deus beneficia. Unde ergo quæ pessides? quæ—Sen.*
*b Παρι τὕ πολύν φόνω
ἀντὶ κακίας ἐν κακοδικίων ἰ᾿ ἀν. Arr.*

F 2

XIII. Those
XIII. Those pleasures are true, and to be reckoned into our happiness, against which there lies no reason. For when there is no reason against any pleasure, there is always one for it, included in the term. So when there is no reason for undergoing pain (or venturing it), there is one against it.

Ob. There is therefore no necessity for men to torture their inventions in finding our arguments to justify themselves in the pursuits after worldly advantages and enjoyments, provided that neither these enjoyments, nor the means by which they are attained, contain the violation of any truth, by being unjust, immoderate, or the like. For in this case there is no reason why we should not desire them, and a distinct one, why we should; viz. because they are enjoyments.

XIV. To conclude this section, The way to happiness and the practice of truth incur the one into the other. For no being can be styled happy, that is not ultimately so; because if all his pains exceed all his pleasures, he is so far from being happy, that he is a being unhappy, or miserable, in proportion to that excess. Now by prop. XI. nothing can produce the ultimate happiness of any being, which interferes with truth: and therefore whatever doth produce that, must be something which is consistent and coincident with this.

Two things then (but such as are met together, and embrace each other), which are to be religiously regarded in all our conduct, are truth (of which in the preceding sect.) and happiness (that is, such pleasures, as accompany, or follow the practice of truth, or are not inconsistent with it: of which I have been treating in this). And as that religion, which arises from the distinction between moral good and evil, was called natural, because grounded upon truth and the natures of things: so perhaps may that too, which proposes happiness for its end, in as much as it proceeds upon that difference, which there is between true pleasure and pain, which are physical (or natural) good and evil. And since both these unite so amicably, and are at last the same, here is one religion which may be called natural upon two accounts.

* Tunc idinio •, k' kata. logos ephe men katastrophe, Simpl. Reflection, animo quando obsequitur suo: quod omnes homines facere oportet, dum id modo satis bone. Plaut. • 
  Itabibis philosophus amplas opes; sed nali detraetas, &c. Sen. Here he seems to confess the folly of the Stoics, who denied themselves many pleasures, that were honest and almost necessary: living in tubs, feeding upon raw herbs and water, going about in a forlorn garment, with a rough beard, staff and satchel, &c. • Quid recetn s, apparet: qui expedit, obscurum est; ita tamen, ut—dubite non pessimus, quam ea 
  substantiali conducunt, qua sunt religiosa. Cic.

Sect.
Sect. III. Of Reason, and the ways of discovering truth.

My manner of thinking, and an objection formerly made, oblige me in the next place to say something concerning the means of knowing, what is true: whether there are any, that are sure, and which one may safely rely upon. For if there be not, all that I have written is an amusement to no purpose. Besides, as this will lead me to speak of reason, &c. some truths may here (as some did in the former section) fall in our way, which may be profitable upon many occasions; and what has been already asserted, will also be further confirmed.

I. An intelligent being, such as is mentioned before, must have some immediate objects of his understanding; or at least a capacity of having such. For if there be no object of his intellect, he is intelligent of nothing, or not intelligent. And if there are no immediate objects, there can be none at all: because every object must be such (an object) either in itself immediately; or by the intervention of another, which is immediate: or of several, one of which must at least be immediate.

II. An intelligent being among the immediate objects of his mind may have some, that are abstract and general. I shall not at present inquire, how he comes by them (it matters not how), since this must be true, if there is any such thing as a rational being. For that reason is something different from the knowledge of particulars may appear from hence; because it is not confined to particular things or cases. What is reason in one instance, is so in another. What is reasonable with respect to Quinctius, is so in respect of Nævius. Reason is performed in species. A rational being therefore must have some of these species (I mean specific and abstract ideas) to work with; or some superior method, such as perhaps some higher order of reasoners may have, but we have not.

The knowledge of a particular idea is only the particular knowledge of that idea or thing: there it ends. But reason is something universal, a kind of general instrument, applicable to particular things and cases as they occur. We reason about particulars, or from them; but not by them.

* The last objection, p. 27.  
** Sect. I. prop. I.  
*** Quis hoc statuit, quod aquam sit in Quinctium, id iniquum esse in Nævium? Cic.*
In fact we find within ourselves many logical, metaphysical, mathematical ideas, no one of which is limited to any particular, or individual thing: but they comprehend whole classes and kinds. And it is by the help of these that we reason, and demonstrate. So that we know from within ourselves, that intelligent beings not only may have such abstract ideas, as are mentioned in the proposition, but that some actually have them: which is enough for my purpose.

III. These ideas or objects, that are immediate, will be adequately and truly known to that mind, whose ideas they are. For ideas can be no further the ideas of any mind, than that mind has (or may have) a perception of them: and therefore that mind must perceive the whole of them; which is to know them adequately.

Again, these ideas being immediate, nothing (by the term) can intervene to increase, diminish, or any way alter them. And to say the mind does not know them truly, implies a contradiction: because it is the same as to say, that they are misrepresented; that is, that there are intervening and misrepresenting ideas.

And lastly, there cannot be an immediate perception of that, which is not; nor therefore of any immediate object otherwise, than as it is. We have indeed many times wrong notions, and misperceptions of things: but then these things are not the immediate objects. They are things, which are notified to us by the help of organs and media, which may be vitiated, or perhaps are defective at best and incapable of transmitting things as they are in themselves, and therefore occasion imperfect and false images. But then, even in this case, those images and ideas that are immediate to the perciever, are perceived as they are: and that is the very reason, why the originals, which they should exhibit truly, but do not, are not perceived as they are. In short, I only say the mind must know its own immediate ideas.

IV. What has been said of these ideas, which are immediate, may be said also of those relations or respects, which any of those ideas bear immediately to each other: they must be known immediately and truly. For if the relation be immediate, the ideas cannot subsist without it; it is of their nature: and therefore they cannot be known adequately, but this must be known too. They are in this respect like the ideas of whole and part. The one cannot be without the other: nor either of them not discover that relation, by which the one must be always bigger and the other less.

To say no more, we may satisfy ourselves of the truth of this, as well as of the foregoing propositions, from the experiences of our own minds: where we find many
ny relations, that are immediately seen, and of which it is not in our power to doubt. We are conscious of a knowledge, that consists in the intuition of these relations. Such is the evidence of those truths, which are usually called axioms, and perhaps of some short demonstrations.

V. Those relations or respects, which are not immediate, or apparent at the first view, may many times be discovered by intermediate relations; and with equal certainty. If the ratio of B to D does not instantly shew itself; yet is the ratio of B to C does, and that of C to D, from hence the ratio of B to D is known also. And if the mean quantities were ever so many, the same thing would follow; provided the reason of every quantity to that, which follows next in the series, be known. For the truth of this I vouch the mathematicians: as I might all, that know any science, for the truth of the proposition in general. For thus theorems and derivative truths are obtained.

VI. If a proposition be true, it is always so in all the instances and uses, to which it is applicable. For otherwise it must be both true and false. Therefore

VII. By the help of truths already known more may be discovered. For

1. Those inferences, which arise presently from the application of general truths to the particular things and cases contained under them, must be just. Ex. gr. The whole is bigger than a part: therefore A (some particular thing) is more than half A. For it is plain that A is contained in the idea of whole, as half A is in that of part. So that if the antecedent proposition be true, the consequent, which is included in it, follows immediately, and must also be true. The former cannot be true, unless the other be so too. What agrees to the genus, species, definition, whole, must agree to the species, individuals, thing defined, the part. The existence of an effect infers directly that of a cause; of one correlate that of the other; and so on. And what is said here holds true (by the preceding proposition) not only in respect of axioms and first truths, but also and equally of theorems and other general truths, when they are once known. These may be capable of the like applications; and the truth of such consequences, as are made by virtue of them, will always be as evident as that of those theorems themselves.

That question in Plato, Τί ὥσ πείρας ἐρχεται, καὶ τίς ἔρχεται ἐκ τῆς πείρας, σιμοῖος ἡ μνήμη, αὐτών ἡ πρώτη ἀναγνώσεις, κτλ. may have place among the verifications of philosophers: but a man can scarce propose it seriously to himself. If he doth, the answer will attend it.  

If he doth, the answer will attend it. 

b = a. c = e. d = ae. 

V. I.  

But the thing appears from the bare inspection of these quantities: b, ab, aeb, aebc, &c.

2. All
2. All those conclusions, which are derived through mean propositions, that are true, and by just inferences, will be as true as those, from which they are derived. My meaning is this: every just consequence is founded in some known truth, by virtue of which one thing follows from another, after the manner of steps in an algebraic operation: and if inferences are so founded, and just, the things inferred must be true, if they are made from true premises.

Let this be the form of an argument. \( M = P : S = M : \text{ergo} S = P \). Here if \( S = M \) be false, nothing is concluded at all: because the middle proposition is in truth not \( S = M \), but perhaps \( S = Ma \), which is foreign to the purpose. If \( S = M \) be true, but \( M = P \) false, then the conclusion will indeed be a right conclusion from those premisses: but they cannot shew, that \( S = P \), because the first proposition if it was express according to truth would be \( Me = P \), which is another thing, and has no place in the argument. But if these two propositions are both true, \( M = P \), \( S = M \), then it will not only be rightly concluded, but also true, that \( S = P \). For the second or middle proposition does so connect the other two, by taking in due manner a term from each of them (or to speak with the logicians, by separately comparing the predicate or major term of the conclusion with the medium in the first proposition, and the subject or minor term with it in the second), that if the first and second are true, the third must be so likewise: all being indeed no more than this, \( P = M = S \). For here the inference is just by what goes before, being founded in some such truth as this, and resulting immediately from the application of it, \( Quae eodem aequalia sunt, & inter se sunt aqualia ; \) or \( Quae conveniunt in eodem tertio, etiam inter se conveniant ; \) or the like. \(^a\) Now if an inference thus made is justifiable, another made after the same manner, when the truth discovered by it is made one of the premisses, must be so too; and so must another after that; and so on. And if the last, and

\(^a\) If men in their inllations, or in comparing their ideas, do many times not actually make use of such maxims; yet the thing is really the same. For what these maxims express, the mind sees without taking notice of the words.
theorems, which they set out with at first, to what immense lengths, and through what a train of propositions have they propagated knowledge! How numerous are their theorems and discoveries now, so far once out of human ken!

I do not enter so far into the province of the logicians as to take notice of the difference there is between the analytic and synthetic methods of coming at truth, or proving it; whether it is better to begin the disquisition from the subject, or from the attribute. If by the use of proper media any thing can be shewn to be, or not to be, I care not from what term the demonstration or argument takes its rise. Either way propositions may beget their like, and more truth be brought into the world.

VIII. That power, which any intelligent being has of surveying his own ideas, and comparing them; of forming to himself out of those, that are immediate and abstract, such general and fundamental truths, as he can be sure of; and of making such inferences and conclusions as are agreeable to them, or to any other truth, after it comes to be known; in order to find out more truth, prove or disprove some assertion, resolve some question, determine what is fit to be done upon occasion, &c. the case or thing under consideration being first fairly stated and prepared, is what I mean by the faculty of reason, or what intitles him to the epithet rational. Or in short, Reason is a faculty of making such inferences and conclusions, as are mention'd under the preceding proposition, from any thing known, or given.

The Supreme being has no doubt a direct and perfect intuition of things, with their natures and relations, lying as it were all before Him, and pervious to His eye: or at least we may safely say, that He is not obliged to make use of our operose methods by ideas and inferences; but knows things in a manner infinitely above all our conceptions. And as to superior finite natures, what other means of attaining to the knowledge of things they may have, is a thing not to be told by me; or how far they may excell us in this way of finding truth. I have an eye here chiefly to our own circumstances. Reason must be understood, when it is ascribed to God, to be the Divine reason, when to other beings above us, to be their reason; and in all of them to transcend ours, as much as their natures respectively do our nature.

G

a Under the word reason I comprehend the intuition of the truth of axioms. For certainly to discern the respect, which one term bears to another, and from thence to conclude the proposition necessarily true, is an act of reason, tho performed quick, or perhaps all at once.

b If many believed, according to Socrates ap. Luc. that ὅσον ἢμι τὸ μέγαθεν ἐγώ καὶ τὰ υπερχων πρὸς τὸ Δωδεκάννωσ.
It cannot be amiss to note further, that tho a man, who truly uses his rational powers, has abstract and universal ideas, obtained by reflexion; out of these frames to himself general truths, or apprehends the strength of such, and admits them, when they occur to him; by these, as by so many standards, measures and judges of things; and takes care to have the materials, which he makes use of in reasoning, to be rivetted and compacted together by them: yet by a habit of reasoning he may come to serve himself of them, and apply them so quick, that he himself shall scarce observe it. Nay, most men seem to reason by virtue of a habit acquired by conversation, practice in business, and examples of others, without knowing what it is, that gives the solidity even to their own just reasonings: just as men usually learn rules in arithmetic, govern their accounts by them all their days, and grow very ready and topping in the use of them, without ever knowing or troubling their heads about the demonstration of any one of them. But still tho this be so, and men reason without advert- ing upon general ideas and abstract truths, or even being aware that there are any such, as it were by rule or a kind of rote; yet such there are, and upon them rests the weight of reason as its foundation.

This, by the way, helps us to detect the cause, why the generality of people are so little under the dominion of reason: why they sacrifice it to their interests and passions so easily; are so obnoxious to prejudices, the influence of their company, and din of a party; so apt to change, tho the case remains the very same; so unable to judge of things, that are ever so little out of the way; and so conceited and positive in matters, that are doubtful, or perhaps to discerning persons manifestly false. Their reasoning proceeds in that track, which they happen to be got into, and out of which they know not one step, but all is to them Terra incognita; being ignorant of the scientific part, and those universal, unalterable principles, upon which true reasoning depends, and to find which and the true use of them are required cool hours and an honest application, beside many preparatives.

In the next place it must be noted, that one may reason truly from that, which is only probable, or even false. Because just inferences may be made from propositions of these kinds: that is, such inferences may be made as are founded in certain truths, tho those propositions themselves are not certainly true: But then what follows, or is concluded from thence, will be only probable, or false, according to

---

* Upon this account it is, that I add the word *given* at the end of my description of reason.
the quality of that proposition, or those propositions, from which the inference is made.

Again; it should be observed, that what I have said of reasoning, chiefly belongs to it as it is an internal operation. When we are to present our reasonings to others, we must transfer our thoughts to them by such ways as we can. The case is to be stated in a manner suitable to their capacities; a fair narration of matters of fact, and their circumstances, to be made; many times persons and things to be described by proper diatyposes, and the like: all which are additional labor, and take up much room in discourses and books, and are performed by different authors, upon different subjects, and in different kinds of writing, with an infinite variety of methods and forms, according to men's different views and capacities; and many times not without a necessity of some condescensions, fictitious advantages, and even applications to the passions. But notwithstanding this, in strict reasoning nothing is required, but to lay steps in a due order, firmly connected, and express properly, without flourish; and to arrive at truth by the short and clear gradation we are able.

Once more; perhaps disputatious men may say I ascribe the investigation of truth to one faculty, when it is in reality the joint business of several. For when we go about this work, we are forced to make use of subordinate powers, and even external helps; to draw diagrams, and put cases in our own imagination; to correct the images there, compound them, divide them, abstract from them; to turn over our memory, and see what has been enter'd and remains in that register; even to consult books, and use pen and ink. In short, we assemble all such axioms, theorems, experiments and observations, as are already known, and appear capable of serving us, or present themselves upon the opening and analysis of the question, or case before us. And when the mind has thus made its tour, fetched in materials from every quarter, and set them in its own view; then it contemplates, compares, and methodizes them; gives the first place to this, the second to that, and so on; and when trials do not succeed rightly, rejects some, adopts others, shifts their order, &c. till at last the series is so disposed, that the thing required comes up resolved, proved, or disproved by a just conclusion from proper premises. Now in this process there seem to be many faculties concerned; in these acts of circumspection, recollection, invention, reflection, comparing, methodizing, judging. But what if all this be so? I do not exclude the use of such subservient powers, or other helps, as are necessary to the exerting this faculty of reason; nor deny the mind.

* Simplex & nuda veritas est luculentior; quia satis ornata per se est: adeoque ornamentis extrin- locus additis succata corruptitur: mendacium verò specie placet alienâ, &c. Laëtan.
manner to work upon. I may allow all the intellectual faculties their proper offices, and yet make reason to be what I have described it to be.

IX. There is such a thing as right reason: or, Truth may be discovered by reasoning. The word reason has several acceptations. Sometimes it is used for that power mentioned in the last proposition; as when we say, Man is a being induced with reason. And then the sense of this proposition must be this; that there is such a use to be made of this power, as is right, and will manifest truth. Sometimes it seems to be taken for those general truths, of which the mind possesses itself from the intimate knowledge of its own ideas, and by which it is governed in its investigations and conclusions; as when we say, Such a thing is agreeable to reason: for that is as much as to say, it is agreeable to the said general truths, and that authentic way of making deductions, which is founded in them. And then the sense of this proposition is, that there are such general truths, and such a right way of inferring. Again; sometimes it seems to stand only for some particular truth, as it is apprehended by the mind with the causes of it, or the manner of its derivation from other truth: that is, it differs not from truth except in this one respect, that it is considered not barely in itself, but as the effect and result of a process of reasoning; or it is truth with the arguments for our assent, and its evidences about it; as when it is said, That such or such an assertion is reason. And then the sense of the proposition is, that there are truths so to be apprehended by the mind. So all comes to this at last; truth (or there are truths, which) may be discovered, or found to be such, by reasoning.

If it were not so, our rational faculties, the noblest we have, would be vain.

Besides, that it is so, appears from the foregoing propositions and what we know within our selves. 'Tis certain we have immediate and abstract ideas: the relations of these are adequately known to the mind, whose ideas they are: the propositions expressing these relations are evidently known to be true: and these truths must have the common privilege and property of all truths, to be true in all the particulars and uses, to which they are applicable. If then any things are notified to us by the help of our senses, or present themselves by any other way or means, to

3 That way, which some Sceptics take to prove the inexistence of truth, has nothing in it, unless it be a contradiction. If any thing, say they, is demonstrated to be true, how shall it be known, that that demonstration is true? Ei ἐν δόξασι, ζητηθεὶς) πάλιν, πῶς ὅτι ἀλήθεια ἢ; ἣς ἐτος ἢς ἀπίτυς. Sext. Emp. Nor do I well comprehend St. Chrysostom's meaning, when he says, ἀποικάζως ἐκδηλοῦμεν, καί ἀλήθεια τῷ ἀδικίᾳ αὐθανασία, τῷ ψυχῆς πάθει, καὶ πίσιν ἱκανῷ. For as no man truly believes any thing, unless he has a reason for believing it: no no reason can be stronger than demonstration.

which
Of Reason, and the ways, &c. 49

which these truths may be immediately applied, or from whence deductions may be made after the forementioned manner, new truths may be thus collected. And since these new truths, and the numerous descendents, that may spring from their loins, may be used still in the same manner, and be as it were the seed of more truth, who can tell at what undescried fields of knowledge even men may at length arrive? At least no body can doubt, but that much truth, and particularly of that kind, which is most useful to us in our conduct here, is discoverable by this method.

They, who oppugn the force and certainty of reason, and treat right reason as a Chimæra, must argue against reason either with reason, or without reason. In the latter way they do nothing: and in the former they betray their own cause, and establish that, which they labor to dethrone. To prove there is no such thing as right reason by any good argument, is indeed impossible: because that would be to shew there is such a thing, by the manner of proving, that there is not.

And further, if this proposition be not true, there is no right reasoning in Euclid; nor can we be sure, that what is there demonstrated, is true. But to say this I am sure is absurd. Nor do I desire, that this proposition, which I here maintain, should be esteemed more certain than those demonstrated by him: and so certain it must be, because there can be no certainty in them, if this be not true.

The great objection against all this is taken from the many instances of false reasoning and ignorance, with which the practices, discourses, writings of mankind are too justly taxed. But, in answer to it, I would have it minded, that I do not say, men may not by virtue of their freedom break off their meditations and inquiries prematurely, before they have taken a sufficient survey of things; that they may not be prepossessed with inveterate errors, biased by interest, or carried violently down with the stream of a sect or fashion, or dazed by some darling notion or bright name; that they may not be unprovided of a competent flock of praecognita and preparative knowledge; that (among other things) they may not be ignorant of the very nature of reasoning, and what it is that gives finewgs to an inference, and makes it just; that they may not want philosophy, history, or other learning requisite to the understanding and settling of the question truly; that they may not have the confidence to pretend to abilities, which they have not, and boldly to judge of things, as if they were qualified, when they are not; that they may not be impotent in their elocution, and misrepresent their own thoughts, by expressing themselves ill, even when within themselves they reason well; that many understandings may not be naturally gross, good heads often indisposed, and the ablest judges sometimes overfeen, through inadvertence or hafte: I say none of these

* Hand alio Ædei proniore lapfff, quàm ubi falsa rei gravis autor existit. Pliny.
The Religion of Nature. Sect. III.

things. The contrary I confess is manifest: and it is an opposition to those errors, which appear in these cases under the name of reason, that we are forced to add the epithet right, and to say right reason instead of reason only; to distinguish it from that, which wrongfully assumes that appellation. Nor, moreover, do I say, that by reasoning the truth is to be discovered in every case: that would imply an extent of knowledge, which we cannot pretend to. I only say, that there is such a thing as right reason, and truth discoverable by it.

I might add, that he, whose faculties are intire and sound, and who by a proper exercise of his mind in scientific studies first opens and enlarges its capacity, and renders his intellectual active and penetrating; takes care to furnish himself with such leading truths, as may be useful to him, and of which he is assured in his own breast; and in treating any subject keeps them still in his eye, so that his discourse may be agreeable to them: I say, such a one is not in much danger of concluding falsely. He must either determine rightly, or soon find, that the subject lies out of his reach. However he will be sensible, that there are many things within his sphere, concerning which he may reason; and that there are truths to be found by this use of his faculties, in which he may securely acquiesce.

Thus that question supposed to be asked p. 27. How shall a man know, what is true? is in part answered. More shall be added by and by: only a proposition or two, which ought not to be omitted, must be first inferred.

X. To act according to right reason, and to act according to truth are in effect the same thing. For in which sense forever the word reason is taken, it will stand either for truth itself, or for that, which is instrumental in discovering and proving it to be such: and then, with respect to this latter sense, whoever is guided by that faculty, whose office consists in distinguishing and pointing out truth, must be a follower of truth, and act agreeably to it. For to be governed by any faculty or power is to act according to the genuine decisions and dictates of it.

That reason, which is right (by the meaning of the words) must conclude rightly: but this it cannot do, if the conclusion is not true, or truth.

That is (for so I would be understood), if the principles and premises from whence it results are true, and certainly known to be so, the conclusion may be taken as certain and absolute truth: but otherwise the truth obtained at the end of the argument is but hypothetical, or only this, that such a thing is so, if such another, or such others are so or so.

That manner of demonstration, in which it has been pretended truth is deduced directly from that which is false, is only a way of flattering, that an assertion is true, because its contradictory is false; founded in that known rule, Contradictoria nec simul vera, nec simul falsa esse possunt, &c.

XI. To
XI. To be governed by reason is the general law imposed by the Author of nature upon them, whose uppermost faculty is reason: as the dictates of it in particular cases are the particular laws, to which they are subject. As there are beings, which have not so much as sense, and others that have no faculty above it; so there may be some, who are induced with reason, but have nothing higher than that. It is sufficient at present to suppose there may be such. And then if reason be the uppermost faculty, it has a right to control the rest by being such. As insensible animals sense commands gravitation and mechanical motions in those instances, for which their senses are given, and carries them out into spontaneous acts: so in rational animals the gradation requires, that reason should command sense.

It is plain, that reason is of a commanding nature: it injoins this, condemns that, only allows some other things, and will be paramount (in an old word ἱεροφεινὸς) if it is at all. Now a being, who has such a determining and governing power so placed in his nature, as to be essential to him, is a being certainly framed to be governed by that power. It seems to be as much designed by nature, or rather the Author of nature, that rational animals should use their reason, and steer by it; as it is by the shipwright, that the pilot should direct the vessel by the use of the rudder he has fitted to it. The rudder would not be there, if it was not to be used: nor would reason be implanted in any nature only to be not cultivated and neglected. And it is certain, it cannot be used, but it must command: such is its nature.

It is not in one's power deliberately to resolve not to be governed by reason. For (here the same way of arguing may be used, that was lately) if he could do this, he must either have some reason for making that resolution, or none. If he has none, it is a resolution, that stands upon no foundation, and therefore in course falls: and if he has some reason for it, he is governed by reason. This demonstrates that reason must govern.

XII. If a rational being, as such, is under an obligation to obey reason, and this obedience, or practice of reason, coincides with the observation of truth, these things plainly follow.

1. That what is said sect. I. prop. IV. must be true with respect to such a being for this further cause, because to him nothing can be right, that interferes with reason, and nothing can interfere with truth, but it must interfere with reason. Such a harmony there is between them. For whatever is known to be true, reason either finds it, or allows it to be such. Nothing can be taken for true by a rational being, if he has a reason to the contrary. 2. That there is to a rational being such a thing as religion which may also upon this further account properly be called natural. For certainly to obey the law, which the Author of his being has given him, is religion: and to obey the law, which He has given or reveal’d to him by making it to result from the right use of his own natural faculties, must be to him his natural religion. 3. A careful observation of truth, the way to happiness, and the practice of reason are in the issue the same thing. For, of the two last, each falls in with the first, and therefore each with other. And so, at last, natural religion is grounded upon this triple and strict alliance or union of truth, happiness, and reason; all in the same interest, and conspiring by the same methods, to advance and perfect human nature: and its truest definition is, The pursuit of happiness by the practice of reason and truth.

Obi. The νοστέρας of right reason and truth, or that which is to be regarded in judging of right and truth is private; that is, every one must judge for himself. For since all reasoning is founded originally in the knowledge of one’s own private ideas, by virtue of which he becomes conscious of some first truths, that are undeniable; by which he governs his steps in his pursuits after more truths, &c. the criterion, or that by which he tries his own reasonings, and knows them to be right, must be the internal evidence he has already of certain truths, and the agreeableness of his inferences to them. One man can no more discern the objects of his own understanding, and their relations, by the faculties of another, than he can see with another man’s eyes, or one ship can be guided by the helm of another. They must be his own faculties and conscience, that must determin him. Therefore to demand another man’s assent to any thing without conveying into his mind such reasons, as may produce a sense of the truth of it, is to erect a tyranny over his understanding, and to demand a tribute which it is not possible for him to pay. It is true indeed, tho I cannot see with another man’s eyes; yet I may be assist’d by another, who has better eyes, in finding an object and the circumstances of it; and so men may be assist’d in making their judgments of things. They may be informed of things, which they did not know before, and which yet require a place among those that are to be

* Religio cogi non potest, verbis potius quam verberibus res agenda est, ut sit voluntas. Last. considerd;
Of Reason, and the ways, &c. 53

consider'd: and they may be directed what to advert principally upon; how to state the question; how to methodize their thoughts, and in general how to reason: especially if they want learning, or have only that part of it, which is little conversant in close reflexions, and doth not teach them to reason, or (as the case too often is) teaches them not to reason. But still this is all in order to produce such a light in them, that by it they may see and judge for themselves. An opinion, tho' ever so true and certain to one man, cannot be transfused into another as true and certain by any other way, but by opening his understanding, and assisting him so to order his conceptions, that he may find the reasonableness of it within himself.

To prevent mistakes I pray take notice here, that, tho' I say men must judge for themselves, I do not say they must in all cases act according to their private and single judgments. In respect of such things, as are private, and concern themselves only, or such as are left open and subject to every man's own sense, they may and ought; only preserving a due deference to them, who differ from them, and are known upon other occasions to have more knowledge and literature than themselves: but when a society is concerned, and hath determined any thing, it may be confidered as one person, of which he, who diffents from the rest, is only perhaps a small particle; and then his judgment will be in a manner absorbed and drowned in that of the majority, or of them to whom the power of judging is intrusted. But I must not digress too far from the main business, the ways of coming at truth.

XIII. The reports of sense are not of equal authority with the clear demonstrations of reason, when they happen to differ. It is true, the ideas caused by the impression of sensible objects are real ideas, and truly known to the mind as they are in themselves; and the mind may use them, and reason truly upon them: that is, the mind may make a right use of the ideas, which it finds in itself. But then whether these are the true ectypes of their originals, and drawn to the life, is many times a question; and many times it is evident they are not. For that which has been anticipated under pr. III. but properly belongs to this, must be acknowledged. They are convey'd through media and by instruments susceptive of different dispositions and alterations, and may consequently produce different representations; and these cannot all be right. But suppose those instruments and media to be as intire and pure, as when intirest and purest; yet still there may be in many respects an incapacity in the faculty to notify things just as they are. How mightily are the shape and size of a visible object varied upon us according to its distance, and the situation of the place, from whence the prospect is taken? Now these things cannot be said of the reports, or rather determinations of reason. For in pure reasoning we use our own ideas for themselves, and such as the mind knows them to be, not as representatives of things, that may be falsely exhibited.
exhibited. This _internal_ reasoning may indeed be wrongly applied to _external_ things, if we reason about them as being what they are not: but then this is the fault not of reason, but of sense, which reports the case wrong; or perhaps of the person, who has not been sufficiently industrious to inform himself.

That same familiar instance of vision proves further, that reason may be applied to _over-rule_ and _correct_ sense. For when the pictures of objects are pricked out by the pencils of rays upon the _retina_ of the eye, and do not give the true figure of those objects (as they not always do, being diversely projected, as the lines proceeding from the several points happen to fall upon that concave surface); this, tho' it might impose upon a being, that has no faculty superior to sense, doth not impose upon our reason, which knows _how_ the appearance is altered, and _why._ To think the sun * is not bigger, than it appears to the eye to be b, seems to be the last degree of stupidity. He must be a brute (so far from being a philosopher), who does not know, that the same line (e. g. the diameter of the sun) at different distances subtends different angles at the eye. A small matter of reason may serve to confute sense in this and the like cases.

Obj. How can reason be more certain than sense, since reason is founded in abstractions, which are originally taken from sensible objects? Anf. Perhaps the mind may by being exercised at first about particular objects by degrees find in itself this capacity of considering things by their _species_, making abstractions, &c. which it would not have done, had it never known any of these particulars. But then after it has found this capacity in itself, and attain'd to the knowledge of abstract and general _ideas_, I do not see why this capacity of reasoning by the help of them may not be used, upon this proficience, to censure and correct the advices of sense concerning even such particulars, as first gave occasion to the mind to exert this capacity and raise it itself. Is it a new thing for a scholar to make such a progress in learning, as to be able after ward to teach the master, from whom he received his first rudiments? May not the modern philosophers correct the ancients, because these first shew'd them the way, and led them into the study of nature? If we look impartially into the history of learning, and even of religion, we shall find that truth has generally advanced by degrees, and many times (very many; as if that was the method of introducing knowledge among men) risen out of _fable_ and _error_, which gave occasion to those inquiries, by which _themselves_ were detected. Thus blind ignorance was succeeded by a twilit of sense: this bright'ned by degrees: at last the sun as

---

*a Tantalus ille—sol. Lucr. Poor creature! b Nec nimio solis major rota—Eis pote sit nostris quâm sensibus esse videatur. Lucr. Epicurus autem potest multis etiam minorem esse quam videatur, &c. Cic.*
it were rose upon some parts of the commonwealth of learning, and cleared up many things: and I believe many more will in time be cleared, which, whatever men think, are yet in their dark and uncultivated state. The understanding, tho’ it starts from particulars, in time makes a further progress, taking in generals, and such notions logical, metaphysical, etc. as never could possibly come in by the senses. Beside, further, the capacity itself of admitting and considering general ideas was originally in the mind, and is not derived from without. The intelligences communicated by sense are only an occasion of using what it had before. Just as a master may, by the exercises he sets, excite the superior capacity of his scholar.

In a word, no man doth, or can pretend to believe his sense, when he has a reason against it: which is an irrefragable proof, that reason is above sense and controls it. But,

XIV. The reports of sense may be taken for true, when there is no reason against it. Because when there is no reason not to believe, that alone is a reason for believing them. And therefore,

XV. In this case to act according to them (i.e. as taking the informations of sense to be true) is to act according to reason and the great law of our nature.

Thus it appears that there are two ways, by which we may assure our selves of the truth of many things; or at least may attain such a degree of certainty, as will be sufficient to determine our practice: by reason, and by sense under the government of reason; that is, when reason supports it, or at least doth not oppose it. By the former we discover speculative truths; by the latter, or both together matters of fact.

XVI. Where certainty is not to be had, probability must be substituted into the place of it: that is, it must be considered, which side of the question is the more probable. Probability, or that, which in this case may incline one to believe any proposition to be true rather than false, or any thing to be rather than not to be, or the
contrary, will generally shew itself upon the application of these and such like rules. 1. That may be reckoned probable, which, in the estimation of reason, appears to be more agreeable to the constitution of nature. No body can certainly foretell, that face-to-face will come up upon two dies fairly thrown before ambo.-face: yet any one would choose to lay the former, because in nature there are twice as many chances for that as for the other. If a strolling wolf should light upon a lamb, it is not evidently known, that he will tear the lamb: but there is such a natural propension in that kind to do it, that no body would much question the event. (This instance might have been taken from amongst men, who are generally as far as they can be, wolves one to another.) If a parent causes his child to be instructed in the foundations of useful learning, educates him virtuously, and gives him his first impulse and direction in the way to true happiness, he will be more likely to proceed and continue in it; than he would be to hit upon it, and continue in it too, if he was left to himself to be carried away by his own passions, or the influence of those people, into whose hands he might fall, the bias of the former lying towards vice, and misery in the end, and the plurality of the latter being either wicked or ignorant or both. So that the advantage in point of probability is on the side of good education. When Herodotus writes, that the Egyptian priests reported the sun had within the compass of 11340 years twice risen where it now sets, and set where it rises, what is fit to be believed concerning the truth of this relation (as of many others), is easily discernable by this rule. Herodotus, possibly delighting in teratical stories, might tell what he never heard: or the passage may be an interpolation; or it may be altered in transcribing: or the priests, who pretended much to a knowledge of great antiquities, might out of mere vanity, to shew what children the Greeks were in respect of them, invent such a monstrous relation, and impose it upon them, whom they thought to have not much science among them: or it might be got into their memoirs before their time, who related it to Herodotus, and so passed upon posterity, as many other fictions and legends have done. These are such things, as are well known to have happend often. But that the diurnal rotation of the earth about her axis should be inverted, is a phenomenon, that has never been known to happen by any body else, either before or since; that is favour'd by no observation; and that cannot be without great

* This was the opinion of a wise man. Prov. For the Hebrew man, whom the writer has quoted in this place, is an erring prophet, and has committed a gross error. The word מַעֲמָר, which is not found in the Arabic, is the name of a prophet, who is said to be a contemporary of the prophet Jeremiah, and who was so called, because he was a writer of considerable elegance. He was a man of great learning, and was celebrated for his eloquence. He was the author of several works, which were highly esteemed by the Jews, and which are still preserved in the libraries of the East. The name מַעֲמָר is a proper name, and is derived from the root מָמָר, which means to write or compose. The word is used in the sense of a writer or composer. The word מַעֲמָר is also used in the sense of a prophet, and is applied to certain persons who are to be considered as such. The word מַעֲמָר is used in the sense of a prophet, and is applied to certain persons who are to be considered as such. The word מַעֲמָר is also used in the sense of a poet, and is applied to certain persons who are to be considered as such. The word מַעֲמָר is used in the sense of a historian, and is applied to certain persons who are to be considered as such. The word מַעֲמָר is also used in the sense of a chronicler, and is applied to certain persons who are to be considered as such. The word מַעֲמָр
Of Reason, and the ways, &c. 57

alteration in the mundane system, or those laws by which the motions of the planets, and of our earth among the rest, are govern'd. That this account then may be false is very consistent with the humor and circumstances of mankind: but that it should be true is very inconsistent with those laws, by which the motions of the celestial bodies seem to be regulated, and tend to persevere in their present courses and directions. It is therefore in nature much more probable, that this account is false. The odds are on that side. 2. When any observation hath hitherto constantly held true, or most commonly proved to be so, it has by this acquired an established credit; the cause may be presumed to retain its former force, and the effect may be taken as probable, if in the case before us there doth not appear something particular, some reason for exception. No man can demonstrate, that the sun will rise again, yet every one doth, and must act, as if that was certain: because we apprehend no decay in the causes, which bring about this appearance, nor have any other reason to mistrust the event, or think it will be otherwise a few hours hence, than it has been hitherto. There is no apodictical argument to prove, that any particular man will die: but yet he must be more than mad, who can presume upon immortality here, when he finds so many generations all gone to a man, and the same enemies, that have laid them prostrate, still pursuing their victories. These and such like, tho' in strictness perhaps not certainties, are justly current for such. So great is their probability. There are other observations, which, tho' not so infallible as those, deserve yet to be thought of, and to have a share in the direction of our judgments. Ex.gr. There have been men in the world and no doubt still are, who, having had opportunities of imposing falsities upon mankind, of cheating, or committing other wickedness, have yet in spite of temptation preserved their integrity and virtue: but, since opportunity has so seldom failed to corrupt them who have been in possession of her, and men's interests and passions continue in general the same, it is more probable her charms will still have the same power and effect, which they use to have; which whoever doth not mind, will be wofully obnoxious to be abused by frauds pious and impious. Briefly, when there is no particular reason for the contrary, what has oft most happen'd, may from experience most reasonably be expected to happen again. 3. When neither nature nor other observations point out the probable conjecture to us, we must be determined (if it be necessary for us to be determined at all) by the reports, and sense of them, whom we apprehend, judging with the best skill we have.
have, to be most knowing and honest. Of all these rules the first is that which deserves the principal regard: the other two are of use, when nature so utterly excludes us from her bosom, that no opportunity is allowed of making a judgment. Lastly, when nature, the frequent repetition of the same event, and the opinion of the best judges concur to make any thing probable, it is so in the highest degree.

It appears from what has been said concerning the nature and foundations of probability, that the force of it results from observation and reason together. For here the one is not sufficient without the other. Reason without observation wants matter to work upon: and observations are neither to be made justly by ourselves, nor to be rightly chosen out of those made by others, nor to be aptly applied, without the assistance of reason. Both together may support opinion and practice in the absence of knowledge and certainty. For those observations upon the nature of men and things, which we have made our selves, we know; and our own reasoning concerning them, and deductions from them we know: and from hence there cannot but arise in many cases an internal obligation to give our assent to this, rather than that; or to act one way, rather than another. And as to the observations of others, they may be so cautiously and skillfully selected, as to become almost our own; since our own reason and experience may direct us in the choice and use of them. The remarks and advice of old men, who have gone through variety of scenes, lived long enough to see the consequences of their own and other peoples actions, and can now with freedom look back and tell where they erred, are ordinarily sure to be preferred to those of young and raw actors. The gnome, apologues, &c. of wise men, and such as have made it their business to be useful spies upon nature and mankind, national proverbs, and the like, may be taken as maxims commonly true. Men in their several professions and arts, in which they have been educated, and exercised themselves all their days, must be supposed to have greater knowledge and experience, than others can usually

\[a\] Statuerem enim, qui sit sapient, vel maximè videtur esse sapientis. Cic.  
\[b\] Non numero hac judicantur, sed pondere, as Tully speaks upon another occasion. Therefore I cannot without a degree of indignation find a sort of writers pleasing themselves with having discoverd some uncivilized nations, which have little or no knowledge of the Deity, &c. and then applying their observations to the service of atheism. As if ignorance could prove anything, or alter its nature by being general!  
\[c\] Aristotle's known rule is "Ei-ka, τα δοκιμα τετοια, τα τε, τοις πλαétais, κυ τοις φιλελλεoν, η τοις πάσι, η τοις παλιοis, κο τοις μάλισται ἐργάσιαι κα ἐνδόξαι. But it is not applicable to all cases.  
\[d\] Δια παρά κεινοι παρ αυτων [πρωταν] παραενθασιμα, ἀποδεικνυς τοις ἀδικηματους, ἐν τοις ἱστα τους ἀπεκαταστασιασ.  
\[e\] When Sophocles, now grown old, was asked, Ποις ἵνα πρες τ' αφροδίσια, he answer'd, Εὐφρησι, η ἀκροπος ἀπεδέλφισα μιθο τει αὐτο άπέφυγον, ἀποδεικνυντα τους κα ἄγυρν δεπτων ἄνθρωπων. ——— πανταπατι η τ' τει τατον κα τ' γνησι πατη μεγα γυνηι κα ιλιο-σίδησα. Plato, & al.  
\[f\] Εν θεραπει οφρυλαεσ των ἄλλων. Plut.

have:
have: and therefore, if through want of capacity or honesty they do not either lose, or belie their opportunities and experience, they are in respect of those things, to which they have been bred and inured, more to be relied upon. And, lastly, histories written by credible and industrious authors, and red with judgment, may supply us with examples, parallel cases, and general remarks, profitable in forming our manners, and opinions too. And by the frequent perusal of them, and meditation upon them a dexterity in judging of dubious cases is acquired. Much of the temper of mankind, much of the nature and drift of their counsels, much of the course of Divine providence is visible in them.

To conclude; that we ought to follow probability, when certainty leaves us, is plain: because then it becomes the only light and guide we have. For unless it is better to wander and fluctuate in absolute uncertainty than to follow such a guide; unless it be reasonable to put out our candle, because we have not the light of the sun, it must be reasonable to direct our steps by probability, when we have nothing clearer to walk by. And if it be reasonable, we are obliged to do it by prop. XI. When there is nothing above probability, it doth govern: when there is nothing in the opposite scale, or nothing of equal weight, this in the course of nature must turn the beam. Tho a man, to refuse the instance before, cannot demonstrate that face-ace will come up before ambs-ace, he would find himself obliged (if he could be obliged to lay at all) to lay on that side: nor could he not choose to do it. Tho he would not be certain of the chance, he would be certain of his own obligation, and on which side it lay.

Here then is another way of discovering, if not truth, yet what in practice may be supposed to be truth. That is, we may by this way discover, whether such propositions as these be true, I ought to do this, rather than that; or, to think so, rather than the contrary.

Obf. I have done now what I chiefly intended here. But, over and above that, we may almost from the premises collect,

First, the principal causes of error, which I take to be such as these. 1. Want of faculties; when men pretend to judge of things above them. As some (straying out of their proper element, and falling into the dark, where they find no ideas but their own dreams, come to) assert what they have no reason to assert: so others deny what there is the highest reason to believe, only because they cannot comprehend it. 2. Want of due reflection upon those ideas we have, or may have: by which it comes to pass, that men are destitute of that knowledge, which is gained by the contemplation of them, and their relations; misapply names, confusedly: and sometimes deal in a set of words and phrases, to which
The Religion of Nature. Sect. III.

No ideas at all belong, and which have indeed no meaning. Of kin to this is, 3. Want of proper qualifications and προτυπώματα. As, when illiterate people invade the provinces of scholars; the half-lettered are forward, and arrogate to themselves what a modest, studious man dares not, tho he knows more; and scholars, that have confined themselves to one sort of literature, lurch out into another: unsuccessfully all. 4. Not understanding in what the nature and force of a just consequence consists. Nothing more common than to hear people assert, that such a thing follows from such a thing; when it doth not follow: i.e. when such a consequence is founded in no axiom, no theorem, no truth that we know of. 5. Defects of memory and imagination. For men in reasoning make much use of these: memory is upon many occasions consulted, and sometimes draughts made upon the phantasy. If they depend upon these, and these happen to be weak, clouded, perverted any way, things may be misrepresented, and men led out of the way by mis-shapen apparitions. There ought to be therefore a little distrust of these faculties, and such proper helps ought to be used, as perhaps the best judgments want the most. 6. Attributing too much to sense. For as necessary as our senses are to us, there are certainly many things, which fall not within their notice; many, which cannot be exhibited after the manner of sensible objects, and to which no images belong. Every one, who has but just saluted the mathematics and philosophy, must be convinced, that there are many things in nature, which seem absurd to sense, and yet must be admitted. 7. Want of retirement, and the practice of thinking and reasoning by our selves. A rambling and irregular life must be attended with a loose and irregular head, ill-connected notions, and fortuitous conclusions. Truth is the offspring of silence, unbroken meditations, and thoughts often revised and corrected. 8. The strength of appetites, passions, prejudices. For by these the understanding may be corrupted, or over-born: or at least the operations of the mind must be much obstructed by the intrusion of such solicitors, as are no retainers to the rational powers, and yet strong, and turbulent. Among other prejudices there is one of a particular nature, which you must have observed to be one of the greatest causes of modern irreligion. Whilst some opinions and rites are carried to such an immoderate height, as exposes the absurdity of them to the view of almost every body but them who raise them, not only gentlemen of the belles lettres, but even men of common sense, many

* Sic ut ἀνωθόνως ὑπομένει. Ἀναξίωσά τε ἢ οῦ σοφία (ἐ Thucyd.) ita recit ingentia debilitat verecundia, perversa confirmat audacia. Plin. jun.

b "Ὅταν τι βελόρως ἀκριβῶς νόσησι, τις ἔψιλον, ἔπονδρωμένος, καταμαχῶρ τις ἄλλος, τι ὡς ἐπιφανείᾳ, ἄπνοια γίνεται τοῖς αἰσθήμασι. Ph. Jud.

times.
times see through them; and then out of indignation and an excessive resentment, not separating that which is true from that which is false, they come to deny both, and fall back into the contrary extreme, a contempt of all religion in general. II. III stating of a question; when men either put it wrong themselves, or accept it so put from others. A small addition or falsity flipped into the case will ferment, and spread itself: an artificial color may deceive one; an incumbered manner may perplex one. The question ought to be presented before its judge clean, and in its natural state, without disguise or distortion. To this last may be subjoin another cause, nearly allied to it; not fixing the sense of terms, and (which must often follow) not rightly understanding what it is, that is to be examind and resolved.

Secondly, the reason why the many are commonly in the wrong and so wretchedly misjudge things. The generality of people are not sufficiently prepared, by a proper education, to find truth by reasoning. And of them, who have liberal education, some are soon immersed and lost in pleasures, or at least in fashionable methods of living, rolling from one visit or company to another, and flying from nothing so much as from themselves and the quiet retreats proper for meditation and reasoning: others become involved in business and the intricate affairs of life, which demand their attention, and ingross their time: others fall into a slothful neglect of their studies and diffuse of what they have learnt, or want help and means to proceed, or only design to deceive life and gratify themselves with the amusements and sensual parts of learning: and others there are, whose misfortune it is to begin wrong, to begin with the conclusion, taking their opinions from places, where they have been bred, or accommodating them to their situation in the world, and the conditions of that employment, by which they are to get their bread, before they have ever considered them; and then making the frequent business of their lives to dispute for them, and maintain them, right or wrong. If such men happen to be in the right, it is luck, and part of their portion, not the effect of their improvements: and if they happen to be in the wrong, the more they study, and the more learning they get, the more they are confirmed in their errors; and having set out with their backs upon truth, the further they go, the more they recede from it. Their knowledge is a kind of negative quantity, so much worse or less than no knowledge. Of this sort there are many: and very few indeed (with respect to the bulk of mankind), whose determinations and tenents were ever in the form of questions: there could not otherwise be so many sects and different denominations of men, as there are, upon

* Aliis nullus est deorum respectus, aliis pudendus. Plin. Sen. The former part of this observation is in truth the effect of the latter.

b Pudet dicere frequentiam salutandi, &c. Hieron. the
The Face of the Earth. Sect. IV.

The face of the earth. The sum of all in a few words is this: many qualifications are requisite in order to judge of some truths, and particularly those which are of greatest importance: proper learning and penetration, vacancy from business, a detachment from the interest of all parties, much sincerity and a perfect resignation to the government of reason and force of truth; which are things not to be reconciled with the usual ignorance, passions, tumultuary lives, and other circumstances which carry most men transverse.

Sect. IV. Of the Obligations of imperfect Beings with respect to their power of acting.

There remains yet another question, supposed also to be proposed by an objector, which must not be forgot; and upon which I shall bestow this very short section. The question was this, If a man can find out truth, may he not want the power of acting agreeably to it?

I. Nothing is capable of no obligation. For to oblige nothing is the same as not to oblige.

II. So far as any being has no power, or opportunity of doing any thing, so far is that being incapable of any obligation to do it: or, no being is capable of any obligation to do that, which it has not power or opportunity to do. For that being, which has not the faculties or opportunity necessary to the doing of any thing, is in respect of that thing a being utterly unactive, no agent at all, and therefore as to that act nothing at all.

To require or command one to do any thing is to require him to apply a power superior to the resistance to be met with in doing it. To require him to apply such a power is the same as to require that his power of such a kind and degree be applied. But if he has no such power, then his power of that kind and degree is nothing: and it is nothing, that is required to be applied. Therefore nothing is required to be done. It is just the same, as if a man was commanded to do something with his third hand, when he has but two: which would be the same as to bid him to do it with no hand, or not bid him do it.

Without more ado, it is a truth confessed by everybody, that nobody is obliged to impossibilities.

From hence will follow, after the manner of corollaries, the two following propositions.
III. Inanimate and unactive beings are capable of no obligation: nor merely sen-
titive of any obligation to act upon principles, or motives above sense.

IV. The obligations of beings intelligent and active must be proportionable to
their faculties, powers, opportunities; and not more.

V. To endeavour may fitly express the use of all the opportunities and powers, that
any intelligent and active, but imperfect, being hath to act. For to endeavour is
to do what one can: and this as every such being may do, where ever he stands in
the scale of imperfects, so none can do more. One may exert his endeavours
with greater advantage or success, than another; yet still they are but endeavours.

VI. The imputations of moral good and evil to beings capable of understanding and
acting must be in proportion to their endeavours: or, their obligations reach, as far as
their endeavours may. This follows again from what has been said: and so does this.

VII. and lastly, They who are capable of discerning truth, tho not all truths, and
of acting conformably to it, tho not always or in all cases, are nevertheless obliged to
do these, as far as they are able: or, it is the duty of such a being sincerely to en-
deavour to practice reason; not to contradict any truth, by word or deed; and in
short, to treat every thing as being what it is.

Thus the general duties of rational beings, mentioned in or resulting from the
preceding sections, are brought together, and finally fixed under the correction or
limitation in this last proposition. This is the sum of their religion, from which
no exemption or excuse lies. Every one can endeavour: every one can do
what he can. But in order to that every one ought to be in earnest, and to ex-
ert himself heartily; not stifling his own conscience, not dissembling, suppres-
sing, or neglecting his own powers.

And now needless to me seem those disputes about human liberty, with which
men have tired themselves and the world. The case is much the same, as if a
man should have some great reward or advantage offered to him, if he would get
up and go to such a place to accept it, or do some certain thing for it, and he,
instead of going or doing any thing, falls into a tedious disquisition about his own
freedom; whether he has the power to stir, or whether he is not chained to his
fear, and necessitated to sit still. The short way of knowing this certainly is to
try. If he can do nothing, no labor can be lost; but if he is capable of acting,
and doth not act, the consequences and blame must be justly chargeable upon
himself.
himself. And I am persuaded, if men would be serious, and put forth themselves, they would find by experience, that their wills are not so universally and peremptorily determin'd by what occurs, nor predestination and fate so rigid, but that much is left to their own conduct. Up and try.

Sure it is in a man's power to keep his hand from his mouth: if it is, it is also in his power to forbear excess in eating and drinking. If he has the command of his own feet, so as to go either this way or that or no whither, as sure he has, it is in his power to abstain from ill company and vicious places. And so on.

This suggests a very material thought: that forbearances, at least in all ordinary cases, are within our power; so that a man may if he will, forbear to do that, which contradicts truth: but where acting is required, that very often is not in his power. He may want abilities, or opportunities; and so may seem to contradict truth by his omission, which, if his infirmities and disadvantages were taken into the account, and the case was rightly stated, he would be found not to do.

* * *

* ἐξεραυνάθη, κ' γυνάκωραθρ. ὅλες ἑκτορεψὶ ὥρι. οἱ μὲ ἀγρίαις ὅποι, κλ. Eurip.*

in Arabic is to die: and from hence the word fatum seems to come (as many Latin words do from that and other Eastern languages), death, if any thing, being fatal and necessary. Yet it doth not follow, that therefore the time or manner of dying is unmoveably fix'd. Οὐ πάντα καθάριζεν ὥς ἄγραφо-

διν ἢ ἱμαραθον ἕγερη, ἀλλ' ὦσα καθάλα. Plut. Chrysippus ap. A. Gell. seems to explain himself much after the same manner. The ancients moreover seem many times to make fate conditional. *Similis se cura fuisset, Nec pater omnipotens Trojans, nec fata vetabunt Stare, &c. Virg.*

* What the Pharisees say, according to Josephus, seems to be right. Οὐ μὴ ὦσα Φαρισαῖοι τινὰ ἢ πάντα τῆς ἱμαραθον ἢμᾶς ἄλγειν ἐργον, τινὰ δ' ἐφ' ἰαντον ἕαγράγχαν, συμβεβαίω τε κ' ἢ γίνεται. R. Albo, in relation to human actions (and the consequent events), explains this opinion thus. Μέμοντα λεφιαὶ νικεῖν ἡμῖν ὑπὸ ἄλγεων κοιλίαν ὑπὸ ἐναλγάτων, μεταβολαί μετὰ ἡμῖν πολὺ ἑκολογηθεί θυγατάρων, κλ. Luc.*

* Dimidium facti, qui cepis, habet. Sapere aude. Hor.*

Aristotle goes further than that old adagial saying (ἀρχὴ ἡμιο παντός). His words are Δοκιμαίοι η το ἡμιο το παντός ἡμιο ἄρχη. *Odus χ' οὐ το κακοίς συνιττακταὶ τι μυχἀν ἐγνάται, οὐ το ἀκυλιτῶν ἁντὶ περιναι ποδες, ου φθόγγοις γαλάται, κλ. Plut.* That in Tibullus, Cum bene juravi, pes tamen isce redit, is a little poetical fally.

* "Ομοιό το ύμερο αγρίαις κ' ἰ τυχείς πρεξίας ἐγνε ἐναλγάτων. οἷοι ὁ φανώθη, ὁ ροηκωθεῖ, κλ. Bal.*
Sect. V. Truths relating to the Deity. Of his existence, perfection, providence, &c.

I have shewn in what the nature of moral good and evil consists; viz. a conformity or disacreement to truth, and those things that are coincident with it, reason and happiness: also, how truth is discovered, by sense, or reason, or both. I shall now specify some of those truths, which are of greatest importance and influence, and require more reasoning to discover them; leaving the rest (common matters of fact) to the common ways of finding them. They respect principally either the Deity, or our selves, or the rest of mankind. The first sort are the subject of this section.

I. Where there is a subordination of causes and effects, there must necessarily be a cause in nature prior to the rest, uncaused. Or thus, Where there is a series, in which the existence of one thing depends upon another, the existence of this again upon some other, and so upwards, as the case shall be, there must be some independent being, upon whom it doth originally depend.

If Z. (some body) be put into motion by Y, Y by X, and X by W, it is plain that X moves Y, and Y moves Z only as they are first moved, X by W, and Y by X: that Z, Y, X are moved, or rather Z more Y more X, taken together are one moved: that W stands here as the first mover, or author of the motion, unmoved by any other: that therefore without W there would be a moved without a mover, which is absurd: and lastly, that of what length soever the series may be, the case will be ever the same; i.e. if there be no First mover unmoved, there must be a moved without a mover.

Further, if W, whom we will suppose to be an intelligent being, and to have a power of beginning motion, hath this power originally in himself and independently of all others, then here not only the first mover in this series, but a First being and original cause is found. Because that, which has a power of beginning motion independent of any other, is a mover independent: and therefore is independent, or has an independent existence, since nothing can be a mover without being. But if W

*a* 
*b* One might with the Στράτηγος (so called by Aristotle, ap. S. Emp.) as well deny, that there is any such thing as motion, as say there is motion without a mover; or, which is the same, a first mover. 

+c* Πρώτον μελαβάκιον. Plat. 'Αριστοτέλειον ειρημένον. Id. Πρώτον κυμάνι. Astr.
The Religion of Nature. Sect. V.

has not this power independently in himself, then he must receive it from some other, upon whom he depends, and whom we will call V. If then V has a power of conferring a faculty of producing motion originally and independently in himself, here will be a First, independent cause. And if it can be supposed, that he has it not thus, and that the series should rise too high for us to follow it; yet however we cannot but conclude, that there is some such cause, upon whom this train of beings and powers must depend, if we reason as in the former paragraph. For,

Univerally, if Z be any effect whatsoever, proceeding from or depending upon Y as the cause of its existence, Y upon X, X upon W, it is manifest that the existence of all, Z, Y, X does originally come from W; which stands here as the Supreme cause, depending upon nothing: and that without it X could not be, and consequently neither Y, nor Z. Z, Y, X, being all effects (or dependents), or rather Z more Y more X one effect, without W there would be an effect without a cause. Lastly, let this retrogression from effects to their causes be continued ever so far, the same thing will still recur, and without such a cause as is before mentioned the whole will be an effect without an efficient, or a dependent without any thing to depend upon; i.e. dependent, and not dependent.

Obj. The series may ascend infinitely, and for that reason have no first mover or cause. Anf. If a series of bodies moved can be supposed to be infinite, then taken together it will be equal to an infinite body moved: and this moved will not less require a mover than a finite body, but infinitely more. If I may not be permitted to place a first mover at the top of the series, because it is supposed to be infinite, and to have no beginning; yet still there must of necessity be some cause or author

---

a The greatest men among the ancients denied the possibility of such an ascent. Οὐτοὶ οὖν τὰ ἐν τοῖς διακορείσται ἔτοιμοι εἰς τὸν οὐρανόν. Arist. If there could be such a process, then all the parts of it but the last would be μέσα: and then ἐπὶ τῆς ὁλης ἀπὸ τὸ πέρατον, ἀλλὰ τίνης ἐν τῷ ἑαυτῷ. To suppose one thing moved by another, this by another, and so on in general, is to suppose ὑπερ της ὑποδιακορείας: ὧν τοιούτου οὐκ ἐν γίνεται τὰ αὐτὰ τὰ περισσώτερα. Simpl. Not only those Arabian philosophers called Hebr. בְּרֵית, Arab. רבי, רבי, but many of the elder Jews have agreed with the Greeks in this matter, and added arguments of their own. Of the former see Mor. nebok. & al. particularly S. Kosri: where their first argument seems to be strong (and much the same with the fourth in S. Emn. noth). אֲנָכָה וַחֲרוֹב אֶת קְרֵךְ, A eva, אֶפֶר אֶת קָרָן אָנֵנָא. Et in the same way, but not till they shall see, that such an action is possible. For they, as Muscatius observes, these reasonings of the Medabberim אֲנָכָה וַחֲרוֹב אֶת קְרֵךְ, yet most certainly let the series of causes and effects be what it will, it is just as long downward as upward; and if they are infinite and inexhaustible one way, they must be so the other too; and then what Saad. Ga. says, takes place אֲנָכָה וַחֲרוֹב אֶת קְרֵךְ. There is another argument of this kind in Justin M. which deserves notice, what stress forever may be laid upon it. Εἴτε τοκετικός μὲν θύρας, λέγει, ἐπειδή, ἅπασα ἤσυχός ἅπασα χαλκικής μέταλλος ἐν ἁρμὸνι ὡς ἤγαγεν τὸ γένος μὲν θύρας.
of the motion, different from all these bodies, because their being (by the supposition) no one body in the series, that moves the next, but only in consequence of its being moved first itself, there is no one of them that is not moved, and the whole can be considered together but as an infinite body moved, and which must therefore be moved by something.

The same kind of answer holds good in respect of all effects and their causes in general. An infinite succession of effects will require an infinite efficient, or a cause infinitely effective. So far is it from requiring none.

Suppose a chain hung down out of the heavens from an unknown height, and tho' every link of it gravitated toward the earth, and what it hung upon was not visible, yet it did not descend, but kept its situation; and upon this a question should arise, What supported or kept up this chain: would it be a sufficient answer to say, that the first (or lowest) link hung upon the second (or that next above it), the second or rather the first and second together upon the third, and so on ad infinitum? For what holds up the whole? A chain of ten links would fall down, unless something able to bear it hinder'd: one of twenty, if not stay'd by something of a yet greater strength, in proportion to the increase of weight: and therefore one of infinite links certainly, if not sustain'd by something infinitely strong, and capable to bear up an infinite weight. And thus it is in a chain of causes and effects tending, or as it were gravitating, towards some end. The last (or lowest) depends, or (as one may say) is suspend'd upon the cause above it; this again, if it be not the first cause, is suspend'd as an effect upon something above it, &c. And if they should be infinite, unless (agreeably

* Aristotle himself, who asserts the eternity of motion, asserts also the necessity of a first and eternal mover. 
* Στιγμὴ τῆς ἐννοίας ἡ ἐκ τῆς τεκνίας—Hom. Aurea de caelo—funtis is mentioned too by Lucr. ἡ ἀναψυχὴ τῆς κατακληματικῆς οὐνίμελῆς ὁλοκλήρου καὶ τοῦ ἄλλου τόκου. S. Iggar. Where more may be seen of this ἄναπσυχὴ τοῦ ὁλοκλήρου out of Ibn Sinai, Maim. &c.
* The chain must be fastend ἔστι πρὸς Ὀλύμπου ποίον. Invenietur, says Macrobius, precessus intuenti à summo Dec uque ad ultimam rerum facem—conexio: & hac est Homeri catena aurea, quam pendere de caelo in terras Deum justissi commemorat. This matter might be illustrated by other similitudes (even ἡ ἀναψυχὴ τοῦ ὁλοκλήρου might serve for one): but I shall set down but one more: and in that indeed the motion is inverted, but the thing is the same taken either way. It occurs in Ἰβοβ. ἱβοβ. and afterward in Refl. ἱβοβ. Suppo'se a row of blind men, of which the last laid his hand upon the shoulder of the man next before him, he on the shoulder of the next before him, and so on till the foremost grew to be quite out of sight; and some body asking, what guide this string of blind men had at the head of them, it should be answered, that they had no guide, nor any head, but one held by another, and so went on, ad infinitum. would any rational creature accept this for a just answer? Is it not to say, that infinite blindness (or blindness, if it be infinite) supplies the place of sight, or of a guide?
to what has been said there is some cause upon which all hang or depend, they
would be but an infinite effect without an efficient: and to affert there is any
such thing, would be as great an absurdity, as to say, that a finite or little weight
wants something to sustain it, but an infinite one or the greatest does not.

II. A Cause or Being, that has in nature no superior cause, and therefore (by the
terms) is also unproduced, and independent, must be self-existent: i.e. existence must
be essential to him; or, such is his nature, that he cannot but be. For every be-
ing must either exist of itself, or not of itself: that which exists not of itself
must derive its existence from some other, and so be dependent: but the Being
mentioned in the proposition is supposed to be independent, and uncaused. There-
fore He must exist, not this way, but the other. The root of His existence
can be sought for no where, but in His own nature: to place it any where
else is to make a cause superior to the Supreme.

III. There must be such a Being. For (beside what has been said already) if
there was not at least one such Being, nothing could be at all. For the un-
iverse could not produce itself; nor could any part of it produce itself, and
then produce the rest: because this is supposing a thing to act before it is.

So Aristotle says of the First mover, Oθ ό συνεξεργαζόμενον οὐδεν, ἣν ἀνὰ τὴν σήμεραν ημέραν, η λ. And after
him the Arabic philosophers, Maimonides, Albo, &c. al. pass. teach all that God exists necessarily.
This seems to be the import of that name, by which God calls himself in Moses's history; ὅ λοις ζωης ἁπαντάριον
οὐκ ἄλλο θεόν ἔχειον; or in one word, which in the mouth of one who speaks of Him in the third person
is ὁ θεός ὁ ρήμα, So Philo explains it; Pha. πίστις. So Abarbanel; ὁ ἀρχαιος έμνυσις. So Gerson, a Necessary being. And so R. L. b. Gerstw,
that God has not a superior, but is independent, the greatest, a necessary being. I omit others, who write after the same man-
ner. There have been even Heathens, who seemd to think, that some such name as this belonged to the
Deity, and for the same reason. For as ὁ ρήμα is used above, so Plutarch
says, that in addressing to Him the second person ἐγὼ (ἡ μοι, or ὁ θεός) is ἀντιοτικος θεος προς προς
την ἄλλην καὶ προς την ἄλλην; and that by this compellation we give Him ἐγὼ ἐγὼ ἐγὼ καὶ μιαν μιαν
προς την ημιν προς την ημιν. Ἡμιν μιαν καὶ μιαν καὶ μιαν ἐγὼ it is τῇ ἄνθρωπος ἢ ἄνθρωπος
καὶ ἄνθρωπος that is ἐγὼ ἐγὼ.

Something must be otherwise, otherwise nothing can be a necessary being, &c. Mor. nee. &c. al.
This needs no demonstration. But there is a very old one in S. Eunom. and after in Ἱβυβ. halice.

IV. Such
IV. Such a Being, as is before described, must not only be eternal, but infinite. Eternal He must be, because there is no way, by which such a Being can either begin or cease to be, existence being of His essence. And infinite He must be, because He can be limited by no other as to His existence. For if there was any being able to limit Him, He must be inferior to that being. He must also in that case be dependent: because He must be beholden to that being for his being what He is, and that He is not confined within narrower limits. Befide, if His presence (whatever the manner of it is) was any where excluded, He would not be there: and if not there, He might be supposed to be not elsewhere: and thus He might be supposed not to be at all. But such a Being, as is described in the II. prop. cannot so much as be supposed not to be.

V. Such a Being is above all things, that fall under our cognizance: and therefore his manner of existence is above all our conceptions. For He is a necessary existent: but nothing within our comprehension is of this kind. We know no being, but what we can imagine not to be without any contradiction or repugnance to nature: nor do we know of any beside this Supreme being himself. For with respect to Him indeed we know, by reasoning, that there must be One being who cannot be supposed not to be; just as certainly as we know there is any thing at all: tho we cannot know Him, and how he exists. Adequate ideas of eternity a and infinity are above us, us finites b.

a What relation or analogy there is between time (a flux of moments) and eternal (unchangeable) existence; how any being should be not older now, than he was 5000 years ago, &c. are speculations attended with insuperable difficulties. Nor are they at all cleared by that of Timaeus ap. Plat. ἔπειτα ἀιῶνα παραδύνητα τῷ ἰδίᾳν κύριον ὅδ᾽ ἀρχον ἐγγυνάχθη, ἦτος ὡς ἢ πρὸς παράδυνημα τῇ αἰῶνα ὅδ᾽ οὐδὲ κύριον ἐδακμέωσε; or that in Philo, Ἀιων ἀναγράφεται ἡ γοῦτι βίος κτώρ, ὡς αἰωνίων χρόνιος. Many philosophers therefore have thought themselves obliged to deny, that God exists in time. Τό, τ’ ἐν, τό, τ’ ἐνα, κρόνος γεγονότοις ὤν, φύσεως λαμβάνομεν τό τιν ἀιώνια ὥσαι, ὅπως ἔρεις, κ.λ. Plato. "Εὐν ὁ Θεός, χρόνον φανεῖ, ὃ ἐν κατ᾽ ἑαυτόν κρόνων μόνα κατὰ τι ἡμέρα ἢ μικρότερον, ἐν χρόνον ἐπὶ χρόνον." I know τό ἐν τῷ ἀνθρώπῳ ἐν τῷ θεῷ, κ.λ. Phil. The Ættrr are above our notions, ἵνα τὸν ἀνθρώπον ἐν τῇ ἐκκλησίᾳ, κ.λ. Maim. Id. Albo has a whole Chapter to shew the reasons why God exists in time. But then he owns, that their Rabbi's do not mean eternal, or everlasting, or that God is under a necessity of existence. In short, they reckon (to use R. Gedal's words) that God is not so, or is not, or that He is under some necessity, or at least that there can be no time, or that God is not subject to necessity. But what they say, doth not include all the present difficulty, time in their use of the word being confined to the duration of this world, which according to them is new. Yet see b. 2. c. 19. ἐν τῷ αἰώνιῳ τῷ ἐν ζωῆς τῷ ἐκκλησίας τῷ ἐν τῷ θεῷ ἐν τ

K
In inquiring after the causes of things, when we find (or suppose) this to be the cause of that, another thing to be the cause of this again, and so on, if we can proceed, it may always be demanded with respect to the last cause that we can comprehend, *What is the cause of that?* So that it is not possible for us to terminate our inquiries of this kind but in something, which is to us incomprehensible. And therefore the Supreme cause must certainly be such. But tho' it is impossible for us to have an adequate notion of his manner of existence, yet we may be sure that,

*VI. He exists in a manner, which is perfect.* For He, who exists of himself, depends in no regard upon any other, and (as being a Supreme cause) is the fountain of existence to other beings, must exist in the uppermost and best manner of existing. And not only so, but (since He is infinite and illimited) He must exist in the best manner illimitedly and infinitely. Now to exist thus is infinite goodness of existence; and to exist in a manner infinitely good is to be perfect.

*VII. There can be but One such Being.* That is, as it appears by prop. III. that there must be at least one independent Being, such as is mention'd in prop. I. so now, that in reality there is but One. Because his manner of existence being perfect and illimited, that manner of being (if I may speak so) is exhausted by Him, or belongs solely to Him. If any other could partake with Him in it, He must want what that other had; be deficient and limited. Infinite and illimited include all.

If there could be two Beings each by himself absolutely perfect, they must be either of the same, or of different natures. Of the same they cannot be; because thus, both being infinite, their existences would be coincident: that is, they would be but the same or one. Nor can they be of different natures: because if their natures were opposite or contrary the one to the other, being equal (infinite both and every where meeting the one with the other), the one would just destroy or be

---

*a Simonides had good reason still to double upon Hiero the number of days allowed for answering that question, *Quid, aut quale sit Deus?* Ap. Cic. b *Nec viget quidquam simile aus secundum.* Hor. c In Mor. neb. Maimonides having proved, that there must be some Being, who exsists necessarily, or whose existence is necessary proceeds from this necessity of existence to derive incorporeity, absolute simplicity, perfection, and particularly unity, *המטוּהוּ כְּלָלָה לֵאְלִי דָּמַוְו וּלַא חֲפָר וּלַא דָּמַוְו.* d Therefore by *Plato* He is called *One.* e *Deus, fi perfectionis est, ut effe debeat, non potest esse nisi unus, ut in so fust omnia.* If there could be more Gods than one, *tantum singulis dieritis, quantum in ceteris fuerit.* Laèt,
the negation of the other: and if they are supposed to be only different, not opposite, then if they differ as disparates, there must be some genus above them; which cannot be: and however they differ, they can only be said at most to be beings perfect in their respective kinds. But this is not to be absolutely perfect; it is only to be perfect in this or that respect: and to be only thus implies imperfection in other respects.

What has been here said ismethinks sufficient to ruin the Manichean cause and exclude the independent principle of evil. For if we cannot account for the existence of that evil, which we find by experience to be in the world, it is but one instance out of many of our ignorance. There may be reasons for it, tho' we do not know them. And certainly no such experience must make us deny axioms or truths equally certain. There are, besides, some things relating to this subject, which deserve our attention. For as to moral good and evil, they seem to depend upon ourselves. If we do but endeavour, the most we can, to do what we ought, we shall not be guilty of not doing it (sect. IV.): and therefore it is our fault, and not to be charged upon any other being, if guilt and evil be introduced by our neglect, or abuse of our own liberty and powers. Then as to physical evil; without it much physical good would be lost, the one necessarily inferring the other. Some things seem to be evil, which would not appear to be such, if we could see through the whole contexture of things. There are not more evil than good things in the world, but surely more of the latter. Many evils of this kind, as well as of the former, come by our own fault; some perhaps by way of punishment; some of physical; and some as the means to happiness, not otherwise to be obtained. And if there is a future state, that which seems to be wrong now may be rectified hereafter. To all which more may yet be added. As, that matter is not capable of perfection; and therefore where that is concerned, there must be imperfections, and consequently evils. So that to ask, why God permits evil, is

As light and darkness are. ἀνόητοι ἀκάλλους καὶ ἑωτικῖοι φθαρτών ἔξαι πότερ τῆς ἀκάλλου συμφωνίας. Baj. There can be no such law between them, as is said to be among the Heathen deities. ὥσπερ ὁ ἀπλοται ἕξιν τον. Oidding ἀπωτικόβ τὸν αὐτοκράτορ. Τῦν Ἐπέλθον, κλ. Εὐστ. b Ἀπολλωνικά ἀκάλλους. ἰπεῖν ἑι ὑποκαθίστασιν. Ιδ. c οὐκ ἔχειν ἀνατέκνωσιν — ἐνα ὧν κατὰ γένους ἀνατέκνωσιν, ὑπενακατὰ τίγκων παράδειγμά, κλ. Κυρ. Ἱερ. d ὑπὸ τοῦτο ὁ κύριος, τότε τις ἐκκλησία, μη Ἔστιν ἵνα τίμωσιν. S. Baj. e Mui God extinguish sun, moon, and stars, because some people worship them? Mithrn. Ἀστή τῆς ἁληδρίας αἰσθή, Θεῶν ἀνατέκνωσιν. Μαξ. T. f Ἡ μὴ ἠρεία ἀνατέκνωσιν ἀπαντεῖν παράδειγμα, κλ. Μαξ. T. This observation might be extended a great way. If there was, e. g. no such thing as poverty, there could be no riches, or no great benefit by them; there would be scarce any arts or sciences, &c. As ὁ ἀνάγκη τῆς ποιησι, τῇ τοῦτον, ἀνάγκη τῆς ἀπεκτασίας, &c. Chrys. g Τὸ μὴ πρὶν ἄντων τὸ ἐλεύθερον ὁ τρίτον, ἵνα συμφωνησαί ἐκ ἀνατέκνωσιν ὑποκαθίστασιν (with more to this purpose). Plut. h V. Mor. nebok. 3. 12. i Παλαιοῦς καὶ ἔχειν αἰσθήθαις. Simpl. j Κακία βλάστησα καὶ ὄλης. Plut.
to ask, why he permits a material world, or such a being as man is; in- deed with some noble faculties, but incumbered at the same time with bodily passions and propensions. Nay, I know not whether it be not to ask, why He permits any imperfect being; and that is, any being at all: which is a bold demand, and the answer to it lies perhaps too deep for us. If this world be designed for a palestra, where men are to exercise their faculties and their virtues, and by that prepare themselves for a superior state (and who can say it is not?) there must be difficulties and temptations, occasions and opportunities for this exercise. Lastly, if there are evils, of which men know not the true origin; yet if they would but seriously reflect upon the many marks of reason, wisdom and goodness every where to be observed in instances, which they do or may understand, they could scarce doubt but the same things prevail in those, which they do not understand. If I should meet with a book, the author of which I found had disposed his matter in beautiful order, and treated his subjects with reason and exactness; but at last, as I read on, came to a few leaves written in a language which I did not know: in this case I should close the book with a full persuasion, that the same vein of good sense, which shewed itself in the former and much greater part of it, ran thro' the other also: especially having arguments a priori, which obliged me to believe, that the author of it all was the same person. This I should certainly do, rather than deny the force of those arguments, in order to assert two authors of the same book. But the evil principle has led me too far out of my way, therefore to return.

VIII. All other beings depend upon that Being mentioned in the foregoing propositions for their existence. For since there can be but one perfect and independent being, the rest must be imperfect and dependent: and since there is nothing else, upon which they can, ultimately, depend beside Him, upon Him they must and do depend.

IX. He is therefore the Author of nature: nor can any thing be, or be done, but what He either causes (immediately, or mediatel), or permits. All beings (by the last) depend upon Him for their existence: upon whom depends their existence, upon him also must depend the intrinsic manner of their existence, or the natures of these beings:

---

1 To that question. Why are we not so made, ὅσι ῥοθῇ θελομένῳ ἐμὴν ἑκάσθεῖν τῷ ἔμαρτάνῳ? S. Basil answers, "Because ἡ ζωὴ ἐπεξείρεθη ὑπὸ ὧν ἐκάθισας γίνεσθαι. And he who blames the Deity because we are not impeccable, ἅμα ἔσεσθαι ὑπὸ τοῦ ἄλλου φύθῳ καὶ λογίᾳ προτιμῆσαι, ἕτερον ἄλλο καὶ ἀληθείαν, καὶ προφητεύεται ἐμπράκτῳ."

2 Ἀθληταί ἀρετῆς, as Philo.

3 In Chrysol. in style, ἡ ζωὴ ἐπεξείρεθη, ἐπὶ σκάλεσθαι ὑπὸ παλικάρια τοῦ ἔρροιτον, καὶ ἐν ἀρώτου τῷ Πλοίῳ τοῦ Ἐλαστοῦ ἐπιδευκτικοῦ, ἔνω τὸ ἔρροιτον τῷ Πλοίῳ τοῦ Ἐλαστοῦ ἐπιδευκτικοῦ, ἔπειτα ἐν ἀρώτου τῷ Πλοίῳ τοῦ Πλοίῳ τοῦ Ἐλαστοῦ ἐπιδευκτικοῦ.
Truths relating to the Deity.

beings: and again upon whom depend their being and nature, upon Him depend the necessary effects and consequences of their being, and being such as they are in themselves. Then, as to the acts of such of them as may be free agents, and the effects of them, He is indeed not the Author of those; because by the terms and supposition they proceed from agents, who have no necessity imposed upon them by Him to act either this or that way. But yet however these free agents must depend upon Him as such: from Him they derive their power of acting: and it is He, who permits them to use their liberty; tho many times, through their own fault, they use it amiss. And, lastly, as to the nature of those relations, which lie between ideas or things really existing, or which arise from facts already done and past, these result from the natures of the things themselves: all which the Supreme being either causes, or permits (as before). For since things can be but in one manner at once, and their mutual relations, ratio's, agreements, disagreements, &c. are nothing but their manners of being with respect to each other, the natures of these relations will be determin'd by the natures of the things.

From hence now it appears, that whatever expresses the existences or non-existences of things, and their mutual relations as they are, is true by the constitution of nature: and if so, it must also be agreeable to His perfect comprehension of all truth, and to His will, who is at the head of it. Tho the act of A (some free agent) is the effect of his liberty, and can only be said to be permitted by the Supreme being; yet when it is once done, the relation between the doer and the deed, the agreement there is between A and the idea of one who has committed such a fact, is a fixed relation. From thenceforward it will always be predicative of him, that he was the doer of it: and if any one should deny this, he would go counter to nature and that great Author of it, whose existence is now proved. And thus those arguments in sect. I. prop. IV. which turned only upon a supposition that there was such a Being, are here confirmed and made absolute.

X. The one supreme and perfect Being, upon whom the existence of all other beings and their powers originally depend, is that Being, whom I mean by the word GOD.

There are other truths still remaining in relation to the Deity, which we may know, and which are necessary to be known by us, if we would endeavour to demean ourselves toward Him according to truth and what He is. And they are such, as not only tend to rectify our opinions concerning His nature and attributes; but also may serve at the same time as further proofs of His existence, and an amplification of some things touched perhaps too lightly. As,

XI. GOD
XI. GOD cannot be corporeal: or, there can be no corporeity in God. There are many things in matter utterly inconsistent with the nature of such a Being, as it has been demonstrated God must be.

Matter exists in parts, every one of which, by the term, is imperfect: but in a Being absolutely perfect there can be nothing that is imperfect.

These parts, tho' they are many times kept closely united by some occult influence, are in truth so many distinct bodies, which may, at least in our imagination, be disjoined or placed otherwise: nor can we have any idea of matter, which does not imply a natural discernibility and susceptibility of various shapes and modifications: i.e. mutability seems to be essential to it. But God, existing in a manner that is perfect, exists in a manner that must be uniform, always one and the same, and in nature unchangeable.

Matter is incapable of acting, passive only, and stupid: which are defects, that can never be ascribed to him who is the First cause or Prime agent, the Supreme intellect, and altogether perfect.

Then, if He is corporeal, where ever there is a vacuum, He must be excluded, and so becomes a being bounded, finite, and as it were full of chasms.

Lastly, there is no matter or body, which may not be supposed not to be; whereas the idea of God or that Being upon whom all others depend, involves in it existence.

XII. Neither infinite space, nor infinite duration, nor matter infinitely extended, or eternally existing, nor any, nor all of these taken together, can be God. For,

Space taken separately from the things, which possess and fill it, is but an empty scene or vacuum: and to say, that infinite space is God, or that God is infinite space, is to say that He is an infinite vacuum: than which nothing can be more absurd, or blasphemous. How can space, which is but a vast void, rather the negation of all things, than positively any thing, a kind of diffused no-

---

a Ei σώμα ἢ σε. φύσις ἢ σώματα μεγέθυν ἢς πλείος, ἢκαστὸ ἢ μεγάλον πρὸ το ἄντο νῦν (Ἑλείν) τῆς ὕλης, says Plotinus even of the Soul.

b Διάθεσις ἢ ἢ ἢ ἢ μέγαν ὠν ων ὑπόθεσιν ἢ τοιοτών ἐστιν ὁ πάντων ἡμῶν ἔργος ἢ ἐνδείξεις ἢ σω. Arist.
Truths relating to the Deity.

thing; how can this, I say, be the First cause, &c. or indeed any cause? What attributes beside penetrability and extension, what excellencies, what perfections is it capable of a?

As infinite space cannot be God, tho He be excluded from no place or space; so tho He is eternal, yet eternity or infinite duration itself is not God b. For duration, abstracted from all durables, is nothing actually existing by itself: it is the duration of a being, not a being.

Infinite space and duration, taken together, cannot be God: because an interminable space of infinite duration is still nothing but eternal space; and that is at most but an eternal vacuum.

Since it has been already proved, that corporeity is inconsistent with Divine perfection, tho matter should be infinitely extended, or there should be an infinite quantity of it, yet still, where ever it is, it carries this inconstance along with it.

If to matter be added infinite duration, neither does this alter the nature of it. This only supposes it to be eternally what it is, i.e. eternally incapable of Divine perfection.

And if to it you add the ideas of both infinite extension (or space) and duration too; yet still, so long as matter is matter, it must always and everywhere be incapable of Divinity.

Lastly, not the universe, or sum total of finite beings, can be God. For if it is, then every thing is divine, every thing God, or of God; and so all things together must make but one being c. But the contrary to this we see, there being evidently many beings distinct, and separable one from another, and independent each of other. Nay, this distinction and separation of existence, beside what we see without us, we may even feel within our selves. We are severally conscious to our selves of the individuation and distinction of our own

a They, who call God ניטא הצליז, do it למשора המוסמך, do it Thistbi. Or, as Phil. Aquin. from the ancients, עצובמכים שלמה וביהי ומוכן, to which Cabbalistic reason assigned too; they intend chiefly to express his omnipresence and immensity. That in All. Ap. seems to be of the same kind, ה有助ך? י? ר? ; ק?ך, & ק?ך, ק?ך, ק?ך. b Such things as these, how incongruous and wild forever they are, have bin affirmed; that God is infinite duration, space, &c. What can be meant by that, ק?ך ה有助ך או מוכן וי? ?ש, in Plotinus?

c Were not they, who converse with books, accustomed to such trials, it would be shocking to find Balbo in Cicero assurting, esse mundum deum: and yet in another place, that it is quasi communis deorum, utque hominum domus, aut urbs utrumque; and deorum, hominumque causa factus: in another, providentia deorum mundum, & omnes mundi partes & initio constitutas esse, & omni tempore administrari: in another, mundum ipsum natura administrari: with other like inconsistencies.
minds from all other: nor is there any thing, of which we can be more cer
tain. Were we all the same being, and had one mind, as in that case we
must have, thoughts could not be private, or the peculiar thoughts of any one
perfon; but they must be common acts of the whole mind, and there could be
but one conscience common to us all a. Befide, if all things conjunctly are God
or the Perfect being (I dread the mention of such things, tho' it be in order to
refute them), how comes this remarkable insistance of imperfection, among
many others, to cleave to us, that we should not know even our felves, and what
we are b? In short, no collection of beings can be one being; and therefore not
God. And the univerfe itself is but a collection of distinct beings c.

XIII. It is so far from being true that God is corporeal, that there could be no
fuch thing as either matter or motion, if there was not some Superior being, upon
whom they depended. Or, God is such a being, that without Him there could be nei-
ther matter nor motion. This must be true of matter: because it has been proved
already, that there can be but one independent being; that he is incorporeal;
and that the existence of all other beings must depend upon Him. But the same
thing may be proved otherwise. If matter (I mean the existence of it) does
not depend upon something above it, it must be an independent being; and if
an independent being, a necessary being; and then there could be no fuch thing
as a vacuum: but all bodies must be perfectly solid; and, more than that, the
whole world could be but one fuch body, five times as firm as brafs, and incapable
of all motion. For that being which exists necessarily does necessarily exist:
that is, it cannot not exist. But in a vacuum matter does not exist.

Moreover, if matter be an independent, necessary being, and exists of itself, this
must be true of every particle of it: and if so, there could not only be no vacuum

a "Ατομος η μείω υπορέω [τριχ] της ουσίας ἡμών ἐπιθύμησις; ἡ Ιησοῦς ἀποκάλυψις της ἀνοίγεις Ἕρμης τῆς νομολογίας, τής ἁλήτου καὶ ἀρρήτου,—καὶ ἡ ἔργων ἐρμαφόδιτον ἡμῶν τα πρὸς ἀμαλάστα, καὶ πρὸς τὸ ποιμ. Plot. Here this author is clear, tho' at some other
times very dark.
b Cur quidquam ignoraret animus hominis, si esset Deus? Cic. c The
system of Spinoza is so apparently false, and full of impieties and contradictions, that more needs not
be said against it: too much might be. What Velleius says in Cicero, is not only true, Si mundus est
deus,—dei membra partim ardentia partim refrigerata dicenda sunt: but, if there is but one sub-
fstance, one nature, one being, and this being is God, then all the follies, madnesses, wickednesses that
are in the world, are in God; then all things done and suffered are both done and suffered by Him;
He is both cause and effect; He both wills and niles, affirms and denies, loves and hates the fame
things at the same time, &c. That such gross Atheism as this should ever be fashionable! Atheism:
for certainly when we inquire, whether there is a God, we do not inquire, whether we ourselves
and all other things which are visible about us do exist: something different from them must be in-
tended. Therefore to say, there is no God different from them, is to say, there is no God at all.

but
Truths relating to the Deity.

but every particle must be ever where. For it could not be limited to occupy only a place of such certain dimensions by its own nature; since this confinement of existence within certain bounds implies non-existence in other places beyond those bounds, and is equal to a negation of existence; and when existence is essential to any being, a negation of existence cannot be so. Nor, in the next place, could its existence be limited by any thing else, because it is supposed to have its existence only of itself; i.e. to have a principle of existence in itself, or to have an existence that is not dependent upon or obnoxious to any other.

And I may add still, if matter be self-existent, I do not see, not only how it comes to be restrained to a place of some certain capacity, but also how it comes to be limited in other respects; or why it should not exist in a manner that is in all respects perfect. So that thus it appears, matter must derive its existence from some other being, who causes it to be just what it is. And the being, who can do this, must be God.

It is to no purpose to object here, that one cannot conceive, how the existence of matter can be derived from another being. For God being above our conceptions, the manner in which He operates, and in which things depend upon him, must also be unconceivable. Reason discovers, that this visible world must owe its existence to some invisible Almighty being; i.e. it discovers this to be fact, and we must not deny facts because we know not how they are effected. It is far from being new, that our faculties should disclose to us the existence of things, and then drop us in our inquiry how they are. Thus much for matter.

As for motion; without a First cause, such as has been described, there could be none: and much less such motions as we see in the world. This may be immediately deduced from the foregoing paragraphs. For if matter itself could not be without such a cause, it is certain motion, which is an affection of matter, could never be.

But further, there could be no motion, unless either there be in matter itself a power of beginning it; or it is communicated from body to body in an infinite succession, or in a circle, and so has no beginning; or else is produced by some incorporeal being, or beings. Now as hardy as men are in advancing opinions that favor their vices, tho' never so repugnant to reason, I can hardly believe any one will assert, that a parcel of mere matter (let it be great or small, of any figure whatsoever, &c.) left altogether to itself, could ever of itself begin to move. If there is any such bold asserter, let him fix his eyes upon some lump of matter, ex. gr. a stone, piece of timber, or a clod (cleard of all animals), and peruse it well; and then ask himself seriously, whether it is possible for him in earnest to believe, that that stone, log, or clod, tho' nothing corporeal or incorporeal should excite or meddle with it, might some time or other of itself begin to creep. However, to be short, a power of beginning motion is
is not in the idea of matter. It is passive, as we see, to the impressions of motion, and susceptible of it; but cannot produce it. On the contrary, it will always persist uniformly in its present state, either of rest or motion, if nothing stirs, diverts, accelerates, or stops it. Nor is there any thing in all physics better settled than that, which is called vis \textit{inertiae}, or the \textit{inertia} of matter.

The propagation of motion from body to body, \textit{without any First mover}, or immaterial cause of motion, has been proved impossible, prop. I.

The supposition of a perpetual motion in a \textit{circle} is begging the question. For if A moves B, B moves C, and so on to Z, and then Z moves A; this is the same as to say, that A moves A, by the intervention of B, C, D, --- Z: that is, \textit{A moves itself}, or can begin motion.

It remains then, that all corporeal motions come originally from some mover \textit{incorporeal}: which must be either that Supreme and self-existing \textit{spirit} himself, who is God; or such, as will put us into the way how to find, that there is such a Being. Turn back to p. 67.

If we consider ourselves, and the voluntary motions begun by us, we may there see the thing exemplified. We move our bodies or some members of them, and by these move other things, as they again do others; and know these motions to spring from the operations of our minds: but then we know also, that we have not an independent power of creating motion. If we had, it could not be so limited as our loco-motive faculties are, nor confined to small quantities and certain circumstances only: we should have had it from eternity, nor could we ever be deprived of it. So that we are necessitated to look up and acknowledge some Higher being, who is able not only to produce motion, but to impart a faculty of producing it.

And if the \textit{petty} motions of us mortals afford arguments for the being of a God, much more may those \textit{greater} motions we see in the world, and the \textit{phenomena} attending them: I mean the motions of the \textit{planets} and \textit{heavenly bodies}. For these must be put into motion, either by one common mighty Mover, acting upon them immediately, or by causes and laws of His appointment; or by their respective movers, who, for reasons to which you can by this time be no stranger, must depend upon some \textit{Superior}, that furnisht them with the power of doing this. And granting it to be done either of these ways, we can be at no great distance from a demonstration of the \textit{existence} of a Deity.
It may perhaps be said, that the matter has not the power of moving itself, yet it hath an attractive force, by which it can move other parts of matter: so that all matter equally moves and is moved. But, allowing those things which are now usually ascribed to attraction, we shall still be necessitated to own some Superior being, whose influence mixes itself with matter, and operates upon it: or at least who, some way or other, imparts this force. For attraction, according to the true sense of the word, supposes one body to act upon another at a distance, or where it is not; but nothing can be an agent, where it is not at all. Matter can act only by contact, impelling contiguous bodies, when it is put into motion by something else, or resisting those which strike against it, when it is at rest. And this it does as matter; i.e. by being impenetrable to other matter: but attraction is not of the nature or idea of matter. So that what is called attraction, is so called only because the same things happen, as if the parts of matter did mutually attract: but in truth this can only be an effect of something, which acts upon or by matter according to a certain law. The parts of matter seem not only to gravitate towards each other, but many of them to fly each other. Now these two contrary motions and seeming qualities cannot both proceed from matter qua matter: cannot both be of the nature of it: and therefore they must be owing to some external cause, or to some other being, which excites in them this, as it were love and discord a.

Besides, as to the revolution of a planet about the sun, mere gravitation is not sufficient to produce that effect. It must be compounded with a motion of projection, to keep the planet from falling directly into the sun, and bring it about: and from what hand, I desire to know, comes this other motion (or direction)? Who impressed it?

What a vast field for contemplation is here open! Such regions of matter about us, in which there is not the least particle that does not carry with it an argument of God’s existence; not the least stick or straw, or other trifle that falls to the ground, but shews it; not the slightest motion produced, the least whisser of the air, but tells it.

XIV. The frame and constitution of the world, the astonishing magnitude of it, the various phenomena and kinds of beings, the uniformity observed in the productions of things, the uses and ends for which they serve, &c. do all shew that there is some Almighty designer, an infinite wisdom and power at the top of all these things:

---

*a* So what we call attraction and aversion (centripetal and centrifugal forces) seem to have been called by Empedocles: φίλικα Ἐν θεοίκαι [τα σωματια], ἐνικατιν ἔνακται. Diog. L. (v. Emp.) V. Arel. Cic. & al.
The Religion of Nature. Sect. V.

such marks there are of both. Or, God is that Being, without whom such a frame or constitution of the world, such a magnificence in it, &c. could not be. In order to prove to any one the grandnefs of this fabric of the world, one needs only to bid him consider the sun with that insupportable glory and lustre that surrounds it: to demonstrate the vast distance, magnitude, and heat of it: to represent to him the chorus of planets moving periodically, by uniform laws, in their several orbits about it; affording a regular variety of aspects; guarded some of them by secondary planets, and as it were emulating the state of the sun; and probably all possess by proper inhabitants: to remind him of those surprising visits the comets make us; the large trains, or uncommon splendor, which attends them; the far country they come from; and the curiosity and horror they excite not only among us, but in the inhabitants of other planets, who also may be up to see the entry and progress of these ministers of fate: to direct his eye and contemplation, through those azure fields and vast regions above him, up to the fixt stars, that radiant numberless host of heaven; and to make him understand, how unlikely a thing it is, that they should be placed there only to adorn and bespangle a canopy over our heads (tho that would be a great piece of magnificence too), and much less to supply the places of so many glow-worms, by affording a feeble light to our earth, or even to all our fellow-planets: to convince him, that they are rather so many other suns, with their several regions and sets of planets about them: to shew him, by the help of glaffes, still more and more of these fixt lights, and to beg in him an apprehension of their unaccountable numbers, and of those immense spaces, that lie retired beyond our utmost reach and even imagination: I say, one needs but to do this, and explain to him such things as are now known almost to every body; and by it to shew that if the world be not infinite, it is infinito similibus; and therefore sure a magnificent structure, and the work of an infinite Architect. But if we could take a view of all the particulars contained within that astonishing compafs, which we have thus hastily run over, how would wonders multiply upon us? Every corner, every part of the world is as it were made up of other worlds. If we look upon this our feast (I mean this

* So far is that from being true, Nequaquam—divinitus esse creatam Naturam mundi, qua tantae est praedita culpâ. Lucret. Men rashly (impiously) cenfure what they do not understand. Like that king of Cyziclae, who fancied himself able to have contrived a better fytem of the world; because he knew not what the true fyslem is, but took it to be as fcribed to him by R. if. ab. Sid., and other astroao-

mers of those times. 

b Since they have, or may have great effects upon the several parts of the folar fyslem, one may fpeak thus without falling into the superfition of the multitude, or meaning what is intended by that, Nequaquam calo spectatam impune cometem (in Claud.), or the like. 

c Fi-
nire, & infinito similibus. Plin.
Truths relating to the Deity.

earth, what scope is here for admiration? The great variety of mountains, hills, valleys, plains, rivers, seas, trees, plants! The many tribes of different animals, with which it is stocked! The multifarious inventions and works of one of these; that is, of us men, &c. And yet when all these (heaven and earth) are survey'd as nicely as they can be by the help of our unassisted senses, and even of telescopical glasses, by the assistance of good microscopes in very small parts of matter as many new wonders a may perhaps be discover'd, as those already observed; new kingdoms of animals; new architecture and curiosity of work. So that as before our senses and even conception fainted in those vast journeys we were obliged to take in considering the expanse of the universe; so here again they fail us in our researches into the principles and constituent parts of it. Both the beginnings and the ends of things, the least and the greatest, all conpire to baffle us: and which way ever we prosecute our inquiries, we still fall in with fresh subjects of amazement, and fresh reasons to believe that there are indefinitely still more and more behind, that will for ever escape our eagerlest pursuits and deepest penetration.

This mighty building is not only thus grand, and the appearances stupendous in it, but the manner in which things are effected is commonly unintelligible, and their causes too profound for us. There are indeed many things in nature, which we know; and some, of which we seem to know the causes: but, alas! how few are these with respect to the whole sum? And the causes which we assign, what are they? Commonly such, as can only be expressed in general terms, whilst the bottoms of things remain unsathomable. Such, as have been collected from experience, but could scarcely be known beforehand, by any arguments à priori, to be capable of rendering such effects: and yet till causes are known after that manner, they are not thoroughly understood. Such, as seem disproportionate and too little, and are so insufficient and unsatisfactory, that one cannot but be inclined to think, that something immaterial and invisible must be immediately concerned. In short, we know many times, that such a thing will have such an effect, or perhaps that such an effect is produced by such a cause, but the manner how we know not; or but grozly, and if such an hypothesis be true. It is impossible for us to come at the true principles of things, or to see into the oeconomy of the finest part of nature and workings of the first springs. The causes that appear to us, are but effects of other causes: the vessels, of which the bodies of plants and animals consist, are made up of other, smaller vessels: the subtilest parts of matter, which we have any notion of (as animal spirits, or particles of light), have their parts, and may for ought we know be compound bodies: and as to the substances

* Πλωτ. 

 Plot.
themselves of all these things, and their internal constitution, they are hid from our eyes. Our philosophy dwells in the surface of nature.

However, in the next place, we ourselves cannot but be witnesses, that there are stated methods, as so many set forms of proceeding, which things punctually and religiously keep to. The same causes, circumstanced in the same manner, have always the same success: all the species of animals, among us, are made according to one general idea; and so are those of plants also, and even minerals: no new ones are brought forth or arisen any where: and the old are preserved and continued by the old ways.

Lastly, it appears I think plainly enough in the parts and model of the world, that there is a contrivance and a respect to certain reasons and ends. How the sun is proposed near the middle of our system for the more convenient dispensing of his benign influences to the planets moving about him; how the plain of the earth's equator intercepts that of her orbit, and makes a proper angle with it, in order to diversify the year, and create a useful variety of seasons, and many other things of this kind, tho' a thousand times repeated, will always be pleasing meditations to good men and true scholars. Who can observe the vapors to ascend, especially from the sea, meet above in clouds, and fall again after condensation, and not understand this to be a kind of distillation in order to clear the water of its groffer salts, and then by rains and dews to supply the fountains and rivers with fresh and wholesome liquor; to nourish the vegetables below by showers, which descend in drops as from a watering-pot upon a garden, &c. who can view the structure of a plant or animal; the indefinite number of their fibres and fine vessels, the formation of larger vessels and the several members out of them, and the apt disposition of all these; the way laid out for the reception and distribution of nutriment; the effect this nutriment has in extending the vessels, bringing the vegetable or animal to its full growth and expansion, continuing the motion of the several fluids, repairing the decays of the body, and preserving life: who can take notice of the several faculties of animals, their arts of saving and providing for themselves, or the ways in which they are provided for; the uses of plants to animals, and of some animals to others, particularly to mankind; the care taken that the several species should be propagated out of their proper seeds (without confusion), the strong inclinations implanted in animals for that purpose, their love of their young, and the like: I say, who can do this, and not see a design, in such regular pieces, so nicely wrought, and so preserved? If there was but one animal, and in that case it could not be doubt-
ed but that his eyes were made that he might see with them, his ears that he might bear with them and so on, through at least the most considerable parts of him, if it can much less be doubted, when the same things are repeated in the individuals of all the tribes of animals; if the like observations may be made with respect to vegetables, and other things: and if all these kinds of things, and therefore much more their particulars, upon and in the earth, waters, air, are unconceivably numerous (as most evidently they are), one cannot but be convinced from that, which is so very obvious to every understanding, and plainly runs through the nobler parts of the visible world, that not only they, but other things, even those that seem to be less noble, have their ends too, the not so well understood.

And now since we cannot suppose the parts of matter to have contrived this wonderful form of a world among themselves, and then by agreement to have taken their respective posts, and pursued constant ends by certain methods and measures concerted (because these are acts, of which they are not capable), there must be some other Being, whose wisdom and power are equal to such a mighty work, as is the structure and preservation of the world. There must be some almighty Mind, who models and adorns it; lays the causes of things so deep; prescribes them such uniform and steady laws; defines and adapts them to certain purposes; and makes one thing to fit and answer to another.¹

That such a beautiful scheme, such a just and geometrical arrangement of things, composed of innumerable parts, and placed as the offices and uses and wants of the several beings require, through such an immense extent, should be the effect of chance only, is a conceit so prodigiously absurd, that certainly no one can espouse it heartily, who understands the meaning of that word. Chance seems to be only a term, by which we express our ignorance of the cause of any thing. For when we say any thing comes by chance, we do not mean, that it had no other cause; but only, that we do not know the true cause, which produced it, or interpos’d in such a manner, as to make that fall out which was not expected. Nor can I think, that any body has such an idea of chance, as to make it an agent or really existing and acting cause of any thing, and much less sure of all things. Whatever events or effects there are, they must proceed from some agent or cause, which is either free or not free (that is, necessary). If it be free, it wills what it produces: and therefore that which is produced is produced with design, not by chance. If it acts necessarily, the event must necessarily be, and therefore it is not by accident. For that, which is by accident or chance only, might not have been; or it is an accident only, that

¹ Τις δ’ ἀνεφελεῖν τὴν μακραίαν πέρας ὁ κόλος, καὶ ἀνεφελεῖν πέρας τὴν μακραίαν, καὶ; Αὐτ. Even such a thing as this doth not come by accident.
it is. There can be therefore no such cause as chance. And to omit a great deal that might yet be said, matter is indefinitely divisible, and the first particles (or atoms) of which it consists must be small beyond all our apprehension; and the chances, that must all hit to produce one individual of any species of material beings (if only chance was concerned), must consequently be indefinitely many: and if space be also indefinitely extended, and the number of those individuals (not to say of the species themselves) which lie dispersed in it indefinite, the chances required to the production of them all, or of the universe, will be the rectangle of one indefinite quantity drawn into another. We may well call them infinite. And then to say, that anything cannot happen, unless infinite chances coincide, is the same as to say, there are infinite chances against the happening of it, or odds that it will not happen: and this again is the same as to say, it is impossible to happen; since if there be a possibility that it may happen, the hazard is not infinite. The world therefore cannot be the child of chance. He must be little acquainted with the works of nature, who is not sensible how delicate and fine they are: and the finer they are, the greater were those of Epicurus.

If it should be objected, that many things seem to be useless, many births are monstrous, or the like, such answers as these may be made. The uses of some things are known to some men, and not to others: the uses of some are known now, that were not known to any body formerly: the uses of many may be discover'd hereafter: and those of some other things may forever remain unknown to all men, and yet be in nature, as much as those discovered were before their discovery, or are now in respect of them who know them not. Things have not therefore no uses, because they are conceal'd from us. Nor is nature irregular, or without method, because there are some seeming deviations from the common rule. These are generally the effects of that influence, which free agents and various circumstances have upon natural productions; which may be deformed, or hurt by external impressions, heterogeneous matter introduced, or disagreeable and unnatural motions excited: and if the case could be truly put, it would no doubt appear, that nature proceeds as regularly (or the laws of nature have as regular an effect), when a monster is produced, as when the usual issue in common cases. Under these circumstances the monster is the genuine issue: that is,

---

*a Hoc qui exigitam fieri posuisse, non intelligo cur non idem putet, si innumerales unius & viginti formae literarum,—aliqo conqicitur, possit ex his in terram excussis annales Emii, ut deinde lege possint, effici: quod necio amne in uno quidem versus posset tantum valere fortuna. Cic. But alas, what are Emiius's annals to such a work as the world is! b He was πενδειφόςός, παντοίς ἑπιβεβα- λῶνων τοις μετέχων D. L. But that part of his physics is here meant, in which he treated of the origin of the world; or rather of infinite worlds; which makes his thought the greater still. For infinite worlds require infinite chances infinitely repeated.
in the same circumstances there would always be the same kind of production. And therefore if things are now and then mis-shaped, this infers no unsteadiness or mistake in nature. Beside, the magnificence of the world admits of some perturbations; not to say, requires some variety. The question is, Could all those things, which we do know to have uses and ends, and to the production of which such wonderful contrivance and the combinations of so many things are required, be produced, and method and regularity be preserved so far as it is, if nothing but blind chance presided overall? Are not the innumerable instances of things, which are undeniably made with reference to certain ends, and of those which are propagated and repeated by the same constant methods, enough to convince us, that there are ends proposed, and rules observed, even where we do not see them. And, lastly, if we should descend to particulars, what are those seemingly useless or monstrous productions in respect of the rest, that plainly declare the ends, for which they were intended, and that come into the world by the usual ways, with the usual perfection of their several kinds? If the comparison could be made, I verily believe these would be found to be almost infinituple of the other; which ought therefore to be reputed as nothing.

They, who content themselves with words, may ascribe the formation of the world to fate or nature, as well as to chance, or better. And yet fate, in the first place, is nothing but a series of events, considered as necessarily following in some certain order; or of which it has always been true, that they would be in their determinate times and places. It is called indeed a series of causes: but then they are such causes as are also effects, all of them, if there is no First cause; and may be taken for such. So that in this description is nothing like such a cause, as is capable of giving this form to the world. A series of events is the same with events happening seriatiem: which words declare nothing concerning the cause of that concatenation of events, or why it is. Time, place, manner, necessity are but circumstances of things that come to pass; not causes of their existence, or of their being as they are. On the contrary, some external and superior cause must be supposed to put the series in motion, to project the order, to connect the causes and effects, and to impose the necessity b.

* Series impexa causarum. Sen.

b Seneca says himself, that in this series God is prima omnium causa, ex quâ cætera pendunt. Indeed it is many times difficult to find out what the ancients meant by fate. Sometimes it seems to follow the motions of the heavenly bodies and their aspects. Of this kind of fate is that passage in Suetonius to be understood, where he says that Tiberius was addictus mathematica, persuasioneque plenus sua fato agi. Sometimes it is confounded with fortune. So in Lucian we find te teum προέδρου τι μεταφερεσθαι, και τι παραπετασθαι εν θεσίνες. And sometimes it is the same with God: as when the Stoics say, ἔστε φήμι. Then we see ἢ Ἰπποκράτης ἢ Δια, ap. Diog. L. and the like elsewhere.
Then for nature. 1. If it be used for the intrinsic manner of existing; that constitution, make, or disposition, with which any thing is produced or born, and from which result those properties, powers, inclinations, passions, qualities, and manners, which are called natural (and sometimes nature), in opposition to such as are acquired, adventitious, or forced (which use is common): then to say, that nature formed any thing, or gave it its manner of existence, is to say, that it formed itself, or that the effect is the efficient a. Befide, how can manner (manner of existing) be the cause of existing, or properly do any thing. An agent is an acting being, some substance, not a manner of being. 2. If it be used in that other sense, by which it stands for the ideas of things, what they are in themselves, and what in their circumstances, causes, consequences, respects; or, in short, that which determines them to be of this or that kind (as when we say, the nature of justice b requires this or that; i.e. the idea of justice requires or supposes it: a crime is of such a nature; that is, bears such a respect to the law, and is attended with such circumstances, or the like): then none of these senses can do an atheist any service. 3. If it be used for the world c (as, the laws of nature may be understood to be the laws of the world, by which it is governed, and the phenomena in it produced; after the same manner of speaking as when we say, the laws of England, France, &c.) then it stands for that very thing, the former and architect of which is the object of our inquiry; and therefore cannot be that architect itself. Under this sense may be comprehended that, when it denotes reality of existence, as when it is said that such a thing is not in nature (not to be found in the world). 4. If it signifies the forementioned laws themselves; or that course, in which things by virtue of these laws proceed (as when the effects of these laws are styled the works of nature): then, laws suppose some legislator, and are posterior to that of which they are the laws. There can be no laws of any nation, till the people are of which that nation consists. 5. If it be used after the same manner as the word habit frequently is; to which many things are ascribed (just as they are to nature), though it be nothing existing distinct from the habits, which particular men or beings contract: then nature is a kind of abstract notion, which can do nothing. Perhaps nature may be put for natures, all natures, after the manner of a collective noun; or it may be mentioned as an agent, only as we personify virtues and attributes, either for variety, or the shorter and more convenient expressing of

a As when Strato Lamps. according to Tully, docet omnia esse effecta natura. b Vis & natura iustitia. Cic. c Almost as if it stood for nata, or res nata; all things, that are produced. (So facta seems to be put sometimes for facti.) Sunt, qui omnia nature nominem appellent; — corpora, & inane, quaeque his accident. Cic.
Truths relating to the Deity. 87

Things. Lastly, if it denotes the Author of nature, or God\(^2\) (the effect seeming, tho by a hard metonymy in this case, to be put for the efficient): then, to Him it is that I ascribe the formation of the world, &c. To all which I must subjoin, that there is an unaccountable liberty taken in the use of this word; and that frequently it is used merely as a word, and nothing more, they who use it not knowing themselves, what they mean by it\(^b\). However, in no sense can it supersede the being of a Deity.

XV. Life, sense, cogitation, and the faculties of our own minds show the existence of some superior Being, from whom they are derived. Or, God is that Being, without whom neither could the be, any more than the things before mentioned. That they cannot flow from the nature of any matter about us as matter, or from any modification, size, or motion of it, if it be not already apparent, may perhaps be proved more fully afterwards. And that our souls themselves are not self-existent, nor hold their faculties independently of all other beings, follows from pr. IV. and VII. Therefore we must necessarily be indebted for what we have of this kind to some great Benefactor, who is the fountain of them. For since we are conscious, that we have them, and yet have them not of our selves, we must have them from some other.

A man has little reason, God knows, to fancy the suppositum of his life, sense, and cogitative faculties to be an independent being, when he considers how transitory and uncertain at best his life and all his enjoyments are; what he is, whence he came, and whither he is going\(^c\). The mind acts not, or in the most imperceptible manner in animalculo, or the seminal state of a man; only as a principle of vegetation in the state of an embryon; and as a sensitive soul in the state of infancy, at least for some time, in which we are rather below, than above, many other animals. By degrees indeed, with age and exercise and proper opportunities, it seems to open itself, find its own talents, and ripen into a rational being. But then it reason not without labor, and is forced to take many tedious steps in the pursuit of truth; finds all its powers subject to great eclipse.

\(^a\) Natura, inquit, has mihi praefat. Non intelligis te, cum hoc dicas, mutare nomen Deo? Quid enim aliud est Natura, quam Deus, & divina ratio, &c.? Sen. When it is said, Neceffe est mundum ipsum natura administrari, op. Cic. what sense are those words capable of, if by nature be not really meant God? For it must be something different from the world, and something able to govern it.

\(^b\) Alii naturam consentit esse vium quandum in ratione, cieniem motus in corporibus necessariis, &c. says Balbus in Cic. What can this vis be: vis by itself, without the mention of any subject, in which it inheres; or of any cause, from whence it proceeds? A soul of the world, plastic nature, hylarchic principle, and the like, are more intelligible than that.

s and diminutions, in the time of sleep, indisposition, sickness, &c. and at best reaching but a few objects in respect of all, that are in the immensity of the universe; and, lastly, is obnoxious to many painful sensations and reflections. Had the soul of man the principle of its own existence and faculties within itself, clear of all dependence, it could not be liable to all these limitations and defects, to all these alterations and removes from one state to another: it must certainly be constant to itself, and persist in an uniform manner of being.

There may be perhaps who will say, that the soul, together with life, sense, &c. are propagated by traduction from parents to children, from them to their children again, and so from eternity: and that therefore nothing can be collected from the nature of them as to the existence of a Deity. Ans. If there could be such a traduction, yet to suppose one traduced to come from another traduced, and from ab aeterno, without any further account of the original of mankind, or taking in any author of this traductive power, is the same as to suppose an infinite series of moveds without a mover, or of effects without a cause: the absurdity of which is shewn already prop. I. But concerning this matter I cannot but think, further, after the following manner. What is meant by tradux animae ought to be clearly explain'd: for it is not easy to conceive how thought, or thinking substances, can be propagated after the manner of branches, or in any manner that can be analogous to it, or even warrant a metaphorical use of that phrase. It should also be told, whether this traduction be made from one or from both the parents. If from one, from which of them is it? And if from both, then the same tradux or branch must always proceed from two flocks: which is a thing, I presume, that can no where else be found, nor has any parallel in nature. And yet such a thing may much better be supposed of vines, or plants, than of thinking beings, who are simple and uncompounded substances.

a For I cannot think that any body will now stand by that way of introducing men first into the world, which is mention'd by Diodorus Sic. but asserted by Lucretius. Ubi quaque loci regio opportuna dabatur, Crecebant uteri terra radicibus apti, &c. 

b What by Tertullian in one place is called anima ex Adam tradux, in another is velut sancius quidam ex matrice Adam in propaginum deduxa, and equally unintelligible. Nor doth he explain himself better, when he confesses there to be duas species feminis, corporalem & animalem (al. corporis femin et anima): or more fully semen animale ex anima diffillatione, sicut viruses illud, corporale femin, ex carnis deaclatione.

c According to the fore-cited author the soul is derived from the father only, & genitalibus feminae foels commissi: and all souls from that of Adam. Definitus animam, says he, Dei flatu natam, ex una redunclan tem: and in another place, ex uno homine tota hoc animarum redundantia agitur. But this doth not well consort with his principal argument for traduction, that children take after their parents. For beside what will here be said by and by, if there is a traduction of all men from one man, and traduction causes likeness; then every man must be like the first, and (consequently) every other.
This opinion of the tradition of souls seems to me to stand upon an unsound foundation. For I take it to be grounded chiefly on these two things: the similitude there is between the features, humors, and abilities of children and those of their parents; and the difficulty men find in forming the notion of a spirit. For from hence they are apt to conclude, that there can be no other substance but matter: and that the soul resulting from some disposition of the body, or some part of it, or being some merely material appendix to it, must attend it, and come along with it from the parent or parents; and as there is a derivation of the one, so there must be also of the other at the same time.

Now the former of these is not always true; as it ought to be, to make the argument valid. Nothing more common than to see children differ from their parents, in their Understandings, inclinations, shapes, Complexions, and (I am sure) one from another. And this similitude has as much force to prove there is not a tradition, as similitude, whenever that happens, can have to prove there is. Besides, it seems to me not hard to account for some likenesses without the help of tradition. It is visible the meat and drink men take, the air they breathe, the objects they see, the sounds they hear, the company they keep, &c. will create changes in them, sometimes with respect to their Intellectuals, sometimes to their Passions and humors, and sometimes to their Health and other circumstances of their bodies: and yet the original stamina and fundamental parts of the man remain still the same. If then the semina, out of which animals are produced, are (as I doubt not) animalcula already formed, which being distributed about, especially in some opportune places, are taken in with aliment, or perhaps the very air; being separated in the bodies of the males by strainers proper to every kind, and then lodged in their seminal vessels, do there receive some kind of addition and influence; and being thence transferred into the wombs of the females, are there nourished more plentifully, and grow, till they become too big to be longer confined: I say, if this be the case, why may not the

* Unde, oto te, says the same author, similitudine anima quoque parentibus de ingenii respondimus,— si non ex anima femine educimus? Then to confirm this, he argues like a father indeed, thus: in illo ipso voluptatis ultimo est quod genitalis virus expellitur, nonne aliquid de anima quoque semen exire? I am ashamed to transfer it more.

b Therefore the said father makes the soul to be corporeal.

c This might seem to be favorable by them who hold, that all souls were created in the beginning (an opinion mentioned in Nabh. ab. &c. al. often), did not the same authors derive the body also? as may be seen in P. Abb. &c. pass. Particularly R. D. Simhhi says of man, סרווכו קרו כוֹאשׁ וְאַרְשָׁו תְּרוּפָּא לְהָיָה בֵּין פֹּתֶךְ רוֹשׁ דָּעָה וְאַשּׁוֹא דְּאָבְרֵי דָּוְאָר וָאֵרַא תִּקָּו נְקַח דָּוָא יָשָׂר וָאֵרַא דָּוָא יָשָׂר דָּוָא יָשָׂר דָּוָא יָשָׂר דָּוָא יָשָׂר דָּוָא יָשָׂר דָּוָא יָשָׂר דָּוָא יָשָׂר דָּוָא יָשָׂר דָּוָא יָשָׂר דָּוָא יָשָׂר דָּוָא יָשָׂר דָּוָא יָשָׂר דָּוָא יָשָׂר דָּוָא יָשָׂר דָּוָа יָשָׂר דָּוָа יָשָׂר דָּוָא יָשָׂר דָּוָא יָשָׂר דָּוָא יָשָׂר דָּוָא יָשָׂר דָּוָא יָשָׂר דָּוָא יָשָׂר דָּוָא יָשָׂר D. This account destroys that argument, upon which Conforinus says many of the old philosophers asserted the eternity of the world: quod negent omnino posse reperiri, aversae ante, an eoa genera genera.
the nutriment received from the parents, being prepared by their ves-" 

tels, and of the same kind with that with which they themselves are nourished, be the same in great measure to the animalcula and embryo that it is to them, and consequently very much assimilate their young, without the derivation of any thing else from them? Many impressions may be made upon the fetus, and many tinctures given to the fluids communicated to it from the parents; and yet it, the animal itself, may not be originally begun in them, or traduced from them. This hypothesis (which has long been mine) suggests a reason, why the child is sometimes more like the father, sometimes the mother: viz. because the vessels of the animalculum are disposed to receive a greater proportion of aliment sometimes from the one, sometimes from the other: or the fluids and spirits in one may ferment and operate more strongly than in the other, and so have a greater and more signal effect. (Here it ought to be observed, that tho what the animalculum receives from the father, is in quantity little in respect of all that nutriment, which it receives by the mother; yet the former, being the first accretion to the original stamina, adhering immediately, and being early interwoven with them, may affect it more.)

Since there cannot be a proper traduction of the child (one mind, and one body) from both the two parents, all the similitude it bears to one of them must proceed from some such cause as I have assigned, or at least not from traduction. For the child being sometimes like the father, and sometimes the mother, and the traduction either always from the father, or always from the mother, there must sometimes be similitude, where there is no traduction: and then if the child may resemble one of them without it, why not the other too? The account I have given, appears, many times at least, to be true in plants, which raised from the same feed, but in different beds and soil, will differ. The different nutriment introduces some diversity into the feed or original plant, and assimilates it in some measure to the rest raised in the same place.

The other thing, which I take to be one of the principal supports to this doctrine of traduction (a supposition, that the soul is merely material, or but the result of some disposition in matter) has been undertaken to be refuted hereafter. But I may premise this here: tho we can have no image of a spirit (because no being can be portrait or represented by an image, but what is material), yet we may have reason to assert the existence of such a substance. Matter is a thing, which we converse with, of which we know pretty well the nature, and pro-

\footnote{\textit{cum \& ovum sine avo, \& avis sine ovo signi non posset.} This question was once much agitated in the world, as may be seen by Macrobius and Plutarch; who calls it, \textit{τὁ ἀνθρωπόν ἐπισττῇ πάρθενῳ τοῖς ἔφοτοις παράγει—πρεσβυτῆς.} \footnote{This is as much as \textit{Epicurus} had to say for his atoms: for they were only σώματα λόγος \textit{Swaro-

\textit{κών, \& \textit{Inb. M.}}
Truths relating to the Deity.

properties; and since we cannot find among them any that are cogitative, or such a thing as life, but several things inconsistent with them, we are under a necessity of confessing that there is some other species of substance beside that which is corporeal, and that our souls are of that kind (or rather of one of those kinds, which are not merely corporeal: for there must be more than one), tho' we can draw no image of it in our own minds. Nor is it at all surprising, that we should not be able to do this: for how can the mind be the object of itself? It may contemplate the body which it inhabits, may be conscious of its own acts, and reflect upon the ideas it finds: but of its own substance it can have no adequate notion, unless it could be as it were object and spectator both. Only that perfect Being, whose knowledge is infinite, can thus intimately know himself.

They, who found the traduction of the soul upon this presumption, that it is material, and attends the body as some part or affection of it, seem further to be most woefully mistaken upon this account: because the body itself is not propagated by traduction. It passeth indeed through the bodies of the parents, who afford a transitory habitation and subsistence to it: but it cannot be formed by the parents, or grow out of any part of them. For all the vital and essential parts of it must be one coeval system, and formed at once in the first article of the nascent animalculum; since no one of these could be nourished, or ever come to any thing, without the rest: on the contrary, if any one of them could prevent and be before the rest, it would soon wither and decay again for lack of nourishment received by proper vessels; as we see the limbs and organs of animals do, when the supply due from the animal oeconomy is any way intercepted or obstructed. And since an organized body, which requires to be thus simultaneously made (fashioned as it were at one stroke) cannot be the effect of any natural and gradual process, I cannot but conclude, that there were animalcula of every tribe originally formed by the almighty Parent, to be the seed of all future generations of animals. Any other manner of production would be like that, which is usually called equivocal or spontaneous generation, and with great reason now generally exploded. And it is certain, that the analogy of nature in other instances, and microscopical observations do abet what I have said strongly.

Lastly, if there is no race of men that hath been from eternity, there is no man who is not descended from two first parents: and then the souls of those two first parents could be traduced from no other. And that there is no such race (none that has been upon this earth from eternity), is apparent from the face of earthly things, and the history of mankind, and arts, and sciences. What is objected

---

* οὐ ἢ ὁ ἐπὶ Θεοῦ ἡμῖν τῷ Ἰσσαί. Plut.  
* Cur suprabellum Thebanum & funera Troja Non alias aliique quoque res eceinere poetæ. Lucr.  

b Si nulla situ genitalis origo Terræ & cæli—
The Religion of Nature. Sect. V.

against this argument from fancied inundations, conflagrations, &c. a has no weight with me. Let us suppose some such great calamity to happen now. It must be either universal, or not. If univer' al, so that no body at all could be saved, then either there must never be any more men, or they must begin again in some first parents. If it was only topical, affecting some one tract of the globe, or if the tops of mountains more eminent, or rocks more firm remaind unaffected, or if there were any natural means left by which men might escape, considerable numbers must certainly survive: and then it cannot be imagined, that they should all be absolutely so ignorant of every thing, that no one should be able to give an account of such things as were common; no one able to write, or read, or even to recollect that there were such things as letters; none, that understood any trade; none, that could tell what kind of habitations they had, how they used to be clothed, how their meat drest, or even what their food was: not can it be thought, that all books, arms, manufactures of every kind, ships, buildings, and all the product of human skill and industry now extant in the world should be so universally and utterly abolished, that no part, no vestige of them should remain; not so much, as to give a hint toward the speedy restoration of necessary arts at least. The people escaping must sure have clothes on, and many necessaries about them, without which they could not escape, nor outlive such a dreadful scene. In short, no conflagration, no flood, no destruction can serve the object's purpose, to reduce mankind to that state, which by ancient memoirs and many undeniable symptoms we find them to have been in not many thousands of years since; I say, no destruction can serve his purpose, but such an one as makes thorough work, only sparing two or three couples, strait of every thing, and the most stupid and veriest blocks b to be picked out of the whole number: natural fools, or mere homines sylvestres would retain habits, and fall to their old way of living, as soon as they had the opportunity to do it. And suppose they never should have such an opportunity; yet neither would this serve him effectually: since without some supernatural Power interposing such a revolution could not be brought about, nor the naked creatures preferred, nor the earth reformed out of its ashes and ruins after such a calcination, or dissolution, such a total demolition of every thing. To this give me leave to add, that tho many inundations, great earthquakes, volcanic's and fiery eruptions have been in particular countries; yet there is no memory or testimony of any such thing, that has ever been universal c, except per-

a. Παντας κ' ετεινοί θεοίς γενόμεναν ἄθρωτον, κ' ἑκνατιν, πυκί μ' ε' ἐπειτε μεμενα. Πάτο. b. Τὶς ἀγαμομνάς κ' ἀμόνας, as Plato speaks. c. For what has been said only in general, and presumptively, to serve as cause, signifies nothing: no more than that testimony in Arnobius, where he seems to allow, that there have been universal conflagrations. Quando, says he, mundus incensus in favillas & cineres dissolutus est? Non ante nos?
Truths relating to the Deity.

haps of one deluge: and as to that, if the genius of the language in which the relation is delivered, and the manner of writing history in it were well understood, some labors and moliminos attempts to account for it might have been prevented. And beside that, the same record, which tells the thing was, tells also how immediately God was concern'd in it; that some persons actually were saved; and that the people who then perished, as well as they who survived, all descended from two first parents: and if that authority be a sufficient proof of one part of the relation, it must be so of the rest.

We may conclude then, that the human soul with its faculties of cogitation, &c. depends upon a Superior being. And who can this be but the Supreme being, or God? Of whom I now proceed to affirm, in the next place, that,

XVI. Though His essence and manner of being is to us altogether incomprehensible, yet we may say with assurance, that He is free from all defects: or One, from whom all defects must be removed.

This proposition hath in effect been proved already*. However I will take the liberty to enlarge a little further upon it here. As our minds are finite, they cannot without a contradiction comprehend what is infinite. And if they were enlarged to ever so great a capacity, yet so long as they retain their general nature, and continue to be of the same kind, they would by that be only render'd able to apprehend more and more finite ideas; out of which, howsoever increased or exalted, no positive idea of the perfection of God can ever be formed. For a Perfect being must be infinite, and perfectly One: and in such a nature there can be nothing finite, nor any composition of finites.

How should we comprehend the nature of the Supreme incorporeal being, or how He exists, when we comprehend not the nature of the most inferior spirits, nor have any conception even of matter itself divested of its accidents? How should we attain to an adequate knowledge of the Supreme author of the world, when we are utterly incapable of knowing the extent of the world itself, and the numberless undiscerned regions, with their several states and circumstances, contain'd in it, never to be frequented or visited by our philosophy; nor can turn our selves any way, but we are still accosted with something above our understanding? If we cannot penetrate so far into effects, as to discover them and their nature thoroughly, it is not to be expected, that we should, that we can ever be admitted to see through the mysteries of His nature,

* Prop. V, VI.
who is the Cause, so far above them all. The Divine perfection then, and manner of being must be of a kind different from and above all that we can conceive.

However, notwithstanding our own defects, we may positively affirm there can be none in God: since He is perfect, as we have seen, He cannot be defective or imperfect. This needs no further proof. But what follows from it, I would have to be well understood and remembered: viz. that from Him must be removed want of life and activity, ignorance, impotence, acting inconsistently with reason and truth, and the like. Because these are defects; defect of knowledge, power, &c. These are defects and blemishes even in us. And tho his perfection is above all our ideas, and of a different kind from the perfections of men or any finite beings; yet what would be a defect in them, would be much more such in Him, and can by no means be ascribed to Him.

Though we understand not His manner of knowing things; yet ignorance being uniform and the same in every subject, we understand what is meant by that word, and can literally and truly deny that to belong to Him. The like may be said with respect to His power, or manner of operating, &c. And when we speak of the internal essential attributes of God positively, as that He is omniscient, omnipotent, eternal, &c. the intent is only to say, that there is no object of knowledge or power, which He does not know or cannot do, He exists without beginning and end, &c. and thus we keep still within the limits allow'd by the proposition b. That is, we may speak thus without pretending to comprehend His nature. And so,

XVII. We may consider God as operating in the production and government of the world, and may draw conclusions from His works, as they are called, notwithstanding any thing which has been said. Because this we can do without comprehending the manner of His existence. Nay, the contemplation of His works leads us into a necessity of owning, that there must be an incomprehensible Being at the head of them.

Though I do not comprehend the mode, in which the world depends upon Him and He influences and disposes things, because this enters into His nature, and the one cannot be understood without the other: yet if I see things, which I know cannot be self-existent, and observe plainly an economy and design in the disposition of them, I may conclude that there is some Being, upon whom their existence doth depend, and by whom they are model'd; may call this

---

*a* If that in Terence had been (not a question, as it is there, but) an affirmation, Ego homuncio hoc non facerem, what a bitter reflexion had it been upon the heathen deity?  

*b* Αϊγοῦχρον ψυχήν ὑπάλληλον ἐμφανέσθαι. Plaut. 

---

Being
Truths relating to the Deity.

Being GOD, or the Author and Governor of the world, &c. without contradicting myself or truth: as I hope it will appear from what has been said, and is going to be said in the next proposition.

XVIII. God, who gives existence to the world, does also govern it by His providence. Concerning this grand question, whether there is a Divine providence, or not, I use to think, for myself, after the following manner.

First, The world may be said to be governed (at least cannot be said to be έπωδεσαντες, or left to fluctuate fortuitously), if there are laws, by which natural causes act, the several phenomena in it succeed regularly, and, in general, the constitution of things is preserved: if there are rules observed in the production of herbs, trees, and the like: if the several kinds of animals are, in proportion to their several degrees and stations in the animal kingdom, furnished with faculties proper to direct and determine their actions; and when they act according to them, they may be said to follow the law of their nature: if they are placed and provided for suitably to their respective natures and wants, or (which amounts to the same thing) if their natures are adapted to their circumstances: if, lastly, particular cases relating to rational beings are taken care of in such a manner, as will at last agree best with reason.

Secondly, If there are such laws and provisions, they can come originally from no other being, but from Him who is the Author of nature. For those laws, which result from the natures of things, their properties, and the use of their faculties, and may be said to be written upon the things themselves, can be the laws of no other: nor can those things, whose very being depends upon God, exist under any condition repugnant to His will; and therefore can be subject to no laws or dispositions, which He would not have them be subject to; that is, which are not His. Beside, there is no other being capable of imposing laws, or any scheme of government upon the world; because there is no other, who is not himself part of the world, and whose own existence doth not depend upon Him.

Thirdly, By the providence of God I mean His governing the world by such laws, and making such provisions, as are mentioned above. So that if there are such, there is a Divine providence.

1. מָכְרָי נֶאָמָה עָרֵב בִּי נַעַם כוּם, as the Jews speak.
2. I shall not pretend here to meddle with particular cases relating to inanimate or irrational beings; such as are mentioned in Mo. nebok. (a leaf's falling from a tree, a spider's catching a fly, &c.) and which are there said to be בכָּלָה לֵז עָרוֹר. Tho' it is hard to separate these many times from the cases of rational beings; as also to comprehend what מָכְרָי נֶאָמָה, perfect accident, is.
Lastly, it is not impossible, that there should be such: on the contrary, we have just reasons to believe there are. It would be an absurd assertion to say, that any thing is impossible to a being whose nature is infinitely above our comprehension, if the terms do not imply a contradiction: but we may with confidence assert, that it is impossible for any thing, whose existence flows from such a being, ever to grow so far out of His reach, or be so emancipated from under Him, that the manner of its existence should not be regulated and determin'd by Him.

As to inanimate substances, we see the case to be really just as it was supposed before to be. The heavenly and greater bodies keep their stations, or perforevere to go the same circuits over and over by a certain law. Little bodies or particles, of the same kind, observe continually the same rules of attracting, repelling, &c. When there are any seeming variations in nature, they proceed only from the different circumstances and combinations of things, acting all the while under their ancient laws. We are so far acquainted with the laws of gravitation and motion, that we are able to calculate their effects, and serve ourselves of them, supplying upon many occasions the defect of power in our selves by mechanical powers, which never fail to answer according to the establishment. Briefly, we see it so far from being impossible, that the inanimate world should be governed by laws, that all the parts of it are obnoxious to laws by them inviolable.

As to vegetables, we see also how they are determin'd by certain methods prescribed them. Each sort is produced from its proper seed; hath the same texture of fibres; is nourish'd by the same kind of juices out of the earth, digested and prepared by the same kind of vessels, &c. Trees receive annually their peculiar liversies, and bear their proper fruits: flowers are drest, each family, in the same colors, or diversify their fashions after a certain manner proper to the kind, and breath the same essences: and both these and all other kinds observe their seasons; and seem to have their several professions and trades appointed them, by which they produce such food and manufactures (pardon the catachresis), as may satisfy the wants of animals. Being so very necessary, they, or at least the most useful, grow easily: being fixt in the earth, insensible, and not made for society, they are generally defective: being liable to a great consumption both of them and their seeds, they yield great quantities of these, in order to repair and multiply their race, &c. So that here is evidently a regulation, by which the several orders are preserv'd, and the ends of them answer'd according to their first establishment too.

Then as to animals, there are laws, which mut. mutand. are common to them with inanimate beings and vegetables, or at least such as resemble their laws. The
Truths relating to the Deity. 97

individuals of the several kinds of those, as of these, have the same (general) shape and members, to be managed after the same manner: have the same vessels replenished with the same kinds of fluids, and furnish'd with the same glands for the separation and distribution of such parts of them, as answer the same intentions in them all: are stimulated by the same appetites and uneasinesses to take in their food, continue their breed, &c. And whatever it is, that proceeds thus in a manner so like to that of vegetables, according to fixed methods, and keeps in the same general track as they do, may be said to observe and be under some like rule or law, which either operates upon and limits it ab extra, or was given it with its nature. But there are, moreover, certain obligations resulting from the several degrees of reason and sense, or sense only, of which we cannot but be conscious in ourselves, and observe some faint indications in the kinds below us, and which can be looked upon as nothing less than laws, by which animals are to move and manage themselves: that is, otherwise express'd, by which the Author of their natures governs them. 'Tis true these laws may not impose an absolute necessity, nor be of the same rigor with those of inanimate and merely passive beings, because the beings which are subject to these (men at least) may be supposed in some measure free, and to act upon some kind of principles or motives: yet still they may have the nature of laws, tho' they may be broken; and may make a part of that providence by which God administers the affairs of the world. Whatever advantages I obtain by my own free endeavours, and right use of those faculties and powers I have, I look upon them to be as much the effects of God's providence and government, as if they were given me immediately by Him, without my acting; since all my faculties and abilities (whatever they are) depend upon Him, and are as it were instruments of His providence to me in respect of such things as may be procured by them.

To finish this head: it is so far from being impossible, that the several tribes of animals should be so made and placed, as to find proper ways of supporting and defending themselves (I mean, so far as it is consistent with the general economy of the world: for some cannot well subsist without the destruction of some others), that, on the contrary, we see men, beasts, birds, fishes, insects all have organs and faculties adapted to their respective circumstances and opportunities of finding their proper food or prey, &c. even to the astonishment of them who attend to the history of nature. If men, who seem to have more wants than any other kind, meet with difficulties in maintaining life, it is because they themselves, not contented with what is decent and convenient only, have by their luxuries and scandalous neglect of their reason made life expensive.

* Therefore if those Essenes in Josephus, who are said ἵοι Ὁ ὁ πατρὶ ἐκ τῶν πατρίων, excluded human endeavours, they must be much in the wrong.

The
98 The Religion of Nature. Sect. V.

The world then being not left in a state of confusion or as a chaos, but reduced into order and methodized for ages to come; the several species of beings having their offices and provinces assigned them; plants and animals subsistence set out for them; and as they go off, successors appointed to relieve them, and carry on the scheme, &c. that the possibility only of a general providence should be allowed, is certainly too modest a demand. We see, or may see, that in fact there is such a providence.

The great difficulty is, how to account for that providence, which is called particular; or that, which respects (principally) particular men. For rational beings and free agents are capable of doing and deserving well, or ill. Some will make a right use of their faculties and opportunities, some will not: the vicious may, or may not repent, or repent and relapse: some fall into evil habits through inadvertence, bad examples, and the like, rather than any design: and these want to be reclaimed: some may be supposed to worship God and to crave His protection and blessing, &c. and then a proper answer to their prayers may be humbly expected. Hence many and great differences will arise, which will require from a governor suitable encouragements, rewards, corrections, punishments; and that some should be protected and fortunate, others not, or less. Now the good or ill state of a man here, his safety or danger, happiness or unhappiness depend upon many things, which seem to be scarce all capable of being determined by providence. They depend upon what he does himself, and what naturally follows from his own behaviour: upon what is done by others, and may either touch him at the same time, or reach him afterward: upon the course of nature, which must affect him: and, in fine, upon many incidents, of which no account is to be given. As to what he does himself, it is impossible for him, as things are in this maze of life, to know always what tends to happiness, and what not: or if he could know, that, which ought to be done, may not be within the compass of his powers. Then, if the actions of other men are free, how can they be determinate to be only such, as may be either good or bad (as the case requires) for some other particular man; since such a determination seems inconsistent with liberty? Beside, numbers of men acting every one upon the foot of their own private freedom, and the several degrees of sense and ability which they respectively have, their acts, as they either confpire, or cross and obliquely impede, or perhaps directly meet

* Ut sibi quis in domum aliquam, aut in gymnasion, aut in forum venerit, cûm videat omnium rerum rationem, modum, disciplinam, non posset ea sine causa fieri judicis, sed esse aliquem intelligat, qui praefecerat, &c. Cic.

b Little things have many times unforeseen and great effects: & contra. The bare sight of a fig, shown in the senate-house at Rome, occasioned Carthage to be deftroyed: quod non Trebia, aut Trajymenus, non Canne bufo insignes Romani nominis percire potiere; non castra Punicâ ad territum lapiorem vulnata, portaque Collina adeepatam ipse Hannibal. Plin.

and
and oppose each other, and have different effects upon men of different makes, or in different circumstances, must cause a strange embarrass, and intangle the plot. And as to the course of nature, if a good man be passing by an infirm building, just in the article of falling, can it be expected, that God should suspend the force of gravitation till he is gone by, in order to his deliverance; or can we think it would be increased, and the fall hastened, if a bad man was there, only that he might be caught, crushed, and made an example? If a man’s safety or prosperity should depend upon winds or rains, must new motions be impressed upon the atmosphere, and new directions given to the floating parts of it, by some extraordinary and new influence from God? Must clouds be so precipitated, or kept in suspense, as the case of a particular man or two requires? To which add, that the differing and many times contrary interests of men are scarce to be reconciled. The wind, which carries one into the port, drives another back to sea; and the rains, that are but just sufficient upon the hills, may drown the inhabitants of the valleys. In short, may we expect miracles; or can there be a particular providence, a providence that suits the several cases and prayers of individuals, without a continual repetition of them, and force frequently committed upon the laws of nature, and the freedom of intelligent agents? For my part, I verily believe there may. For,

1. It seems to me not impossible, that God should know what is to come; on the contrary, it is highly reasonable to think, that He does and must know things future. Whatever happens in the world, which does not come immediately from Him, must either be the effect of mechanical causes, or of the motions of living beings and free agents. For chance we have seen already is no cause. Now as to the former, it cannot be impossible for Him, upon whom the being and nature of every thing depends, and who therefore must intimately know all their powers and what effects they will have, to see through the whole train of causes and effects, and whatever will come to pass in

---

*a* While every one purses his own designs, they must interfere, and hinder one another. *Adsummum succedere honorem Certantes, iter insenum secere viai.* Lucr. *b* Or is it not more likely, *καὶ αὕτης ἐκκλησίας, καὶ ἐνεργείαν ἐναντίων, οὐ πάντα πρὸς ἂν;* (in Plotinus’s words)? *c* Something more than this we meet with in Ong’s paraphrase, where it is said, that upon Moses’s prayer מָשָׁאֵר רָוִי רוּחַ לָכֶם מֵאָשׁ עַל אֶרֶץ. Which same place Rashi explains after the same manner; תְאֹרֵזוּ לְגָּלְגָל הַיָּרֵדָה. *d* In Lucian, τῶν πλεόνατον ὁ μόρος τῷ πλείστῳ ἐπιτίθεσθαι, οὐ γὰρ ἡ ἕξις ἀρχαῖα ἒκτισθαί ἐν μέτρῳ, ὅτι καθιστάτων. *e* Some have talked to this purpose. So R. Albo says of some prophets and ḳḥṣḏيمن, שְׁהוֹדָה perímu. So R. ประเทศ, that the good or evil, which happens to a man in this world by way of reward or punishment, is according to the world. And accordingly in Sed. teph. we find this thanksgiving: טֲנוֹמָא אֲמוֹנָא... עלָ נְפָיצֶי שְׁכֵבלָי וּמְלָמֹד עֹסֵי.
The Religion of Nature. Sect. V.

way: nay, it is impossible, that He should not do it. We our selves, if we are satisfied of the goodness of the materials of which a machine is made, and understand the force and determination of those powers by which it is moved, can tell what it will do, or what will be the effect of it. And as to those things which depend upon the voluntary motions of free agents, it is well known, that men (by whom learn how to judge of the reft) can only be free with respect to such things as are within their sphere; not great, God knows: and their freedom with respect to these can only consist in a liberty either to act, without any incumbent necessity, as their own reason and judgment shall determinethem; or to neglect their rational faculties, and not use them at all, but suffer themselves to be carried away by the tendences and inclinations of the body, which left thus to itself acts in a manner mechanically. Now He, who knows what is in mens power, what not; knows the make of their bodies, and all the mechanism and propension of them; knows the nature and extent of their understandings, and what will determinethem this or that way; knows all the process of natural (or second) causes, and consequently how these may work upon them: He, I say, who knows all this, may know what men will do, if He can but know this one thing more, viz. whether they will use their rational faculties or not. And since even we our selves, mean and defective as we are, can in some measure conceive, how so much as this may be done, and seem to want but one step to finish the account, can we with any shew of reason deny to a Perfect being this one article more, or think that He cannot do that too; especially if we call to mind, that this very power of using our own faculties is held of Him?

Observe what a sagacity there is in some men, not only in respect of physical causes and effects, but also of the future actings of mankind; and how very easy it is many times, if the persons concern'd, their characters, and circumstances are given, to foresee what they will do: as also to foretell many general events, tho the intermediate transactions upon which they depend are not known. Consider how much more remarkable this penetration is in some men, than in others: consider further, that if there be any minds more perfect than the human, (and who can be so conceited of himself as to question this?) they must have it in a still more eminent degree, proportionable to the excellence of their natures: in the last place, do but allow

---

a What Seneca says of the Gods (in the heathen style), may be said of the true God. Nota qui illi operis sui serie; omniumque illi rerum per manus suas iturum scienfia in aperto semper est; nobis ex abdito subit, &c.

b O η ζωόπλαστος θεος ἔποιησε τι εις τυφλου καλος δημιουργους. Ph. Jud.

c Si a nostra voluntates in caufarum ordine sunt, qui certius est Deus, ejusque praeicientia continentur. Cíc. S. Auft.

d Etes quem exitum aces habitura sit, divinare nemo potest; tamen belli exitum video, &c. and after, quem ego tam video animo, quam ea, qua oculis cernimus. Cíc.
Truths relating to the Deity

(as you must) this power of discerning to be in God proportionable to His nature, as in lower beings it is proportionable to theirs, and then it becomes infinite; and then again, the future actions of free agents are at once all unlocked, and exposed to His view. For that knowledge is not infinite, which is limited to things past or present or which come to pass necessarily.

After all, what has been said is only a feeble attempt to shew, how far even we can go toward a conception of the manner, in which future things may be known: but as we have no adequate idea of an infinite and perfect Being, His powers, and among them His power of knowing, must infinitely pass all our understanding. It must be something different from and infinitely transcending all the modes of apprehending things, which we know any thing of.

We know matters of fact by the help of our senses, the strength of memory, impressions made upon phantas, or the report of others (tho that indeed is comprehended under senses. For that, which we know only by report, in proper speaking we only know the report of, or we have heard it); and all these ways do suppose those matters either to be present, or once to have been; but is it therefore impossible, that there should be any other ways of knowing? This is so far from being true, that, since God has no organs of sensation, nor such mean faculties as the best of ours are, and consequently cannot know things in the way which we know them in, if He doth not know them by some other way, He cannot know them at all, even tho they were present: and therefore there must be other ways, or at least another way of knowing even matters of fact. And since the difficulty we find in determining, whether future matters of fact may be known, arises chiefly from this, that we in reality consider, without minding it, whether they may be known in our way of knowing; it vanishes, when we recollect, that they are and must be known to God by some other way; and not only so, but this must be some way, that is perfect and worthy of Him. Future, or what to us is future, may be as truly the object of Divine knowledge, as present is of ours: nor can we tell, what respect past, present, to come, have to the Divine mind, or wherein they differ. To deaf men there is no such thing as sound, to blind no such thing as light or color: nor, when these things are defined and explained to them in the best manner, which their circumstances admit, are they capable of knowing how they are apprehended. So here, we cannot tell how future things are known perhaps, any more than deaf or blind people what sounds or colors are, and how they are perceived; but yet there may be a way of knowing those,
as well as there is of perceiving these. As they want a fifth sense to perceive sounds or colors, of which they have no notion: so perhaps we may want a fifth sense, or some faculty, of which future events may be the proper objects. Nor have we any more reason to deny, that there is in nature such a sense or faculty, than the deaf or blind have to deny, that there is such a sense as that of hearing or seeing.

We can never conclude, that it is impossible for an infinitely perfect Being to know what a free agent will choose to do, till we can comprehend all the powers of such a Being, and that is till we our selves are infinite and perfect. So far are we from being able to pronounce with any shew of reason, that it is impossible there should be such knowledge in God.

In the first place, this knowledge is not only not impossible, but that which has been already proved concerning the Deity and His perfection doth necessarily infer, that nothing can be hid from Him. For if ignorance be an imperfection, the ignorance of future acts and events must be so: and then if all imperfections are to be denied of Him, this must.

There is indeed a common prejudice against the prescience (as it is usually called) of God; which suggests, that, if God foreknows things, He foreknows them infallibly or certainly: and if so, then they are certain; and if certain, then they are no longer matter of freedom. And thus prescience and freedom are inconsistent. But sure the nature of a thing is not changed by being known, or known before hand. For if it is known truly, it is known to be what it is; and therefore is not altered by this. The truth is, God foresees, or rather sees the actions of free agents, because they will be; not that they will be, because He foresees them. If I see an object in a certain place, the veracity of my faculties supposed, it is certain that object is there: but yet it cannot be said, it is there because I see it there, or that my seeing it there is the cause of its being there: but because it is there, therefore I see it there. It is the object, that determines my sensation: and so in the other case, it is a future choice of the free agent, that determines the prescience, which yet may be infallibly true.

Let us put these two contradictory propositions, B (some particular man) will go to church next Sunday, and B will not go to church next Sunday; and let us sup-

---

* To attempt to comprehend the manner of God's knowing is the same as to endeavour to understand Him, Maim. Much might be inferred upon this subject (out of Abarb. particularly) which I shall omit.

+ Sicur enim in memoria sua non cogis faciis esse quae praeterierunt; hic Deus presciensia sua non cognoscit facienda quae futura sunt. S. Aug.
Truths relating to the Deity. 103

pose withall, that B is free, and that his going or not going depends merely upon his own will. In this case he may indeed do either, but yet he can do but one of these two things, either go, or not go, and one he must do. One of these propositions therefore is now true; but yet it is not the truth of that proposition, which forces him to do what is contained in it: on the contrary, the truth of the proposition arises from what he shall choose to do. And if that truth doth not force him, the foreknowledge of that truth will not. We may sure suppose B himself to know certainly before hand, which of the two he will choose to do, whether to go to church or not (I mean so far as it depends upon his choice only): and if so, then here is B's own foreknowledge consistent with his freedom: and if we can but, further, suppose God to know as much in this respect as B does, there will be God's foreknowledge consistent with B's freedom.

In a word, it involves no contradiction to assert, that God certainly knows what any man will choose; and therefore that he should do this cannot be said to be impossible.

2. It is not impossible, that such laws of nature, and such a series of causes and effects may be originally design'd, that not only general provisions may be made for the several species of beings, but even particular cases, at least many of them, may also be provided for without innovations or alterations in the course of nature. It is true this amounts to a prodigious scheme, in which all things to come are as we were comprehended under one view, estimated, and laid together; but when I consider, what a mass of wonders the universe is in other regards: what a Being God is, incomprehensibly great and perfect; that He cannot be ignorant of any thing, no not of the future wants and deportments of particular men, and that all things, which derive from Him as the First cause, must do this so as to be consistent one with another, and in such a manner, as to make one compact system, befitting so great an Author: I say, when I consider this, I cannot deny such an adjustment of things to be within His power. The order of events, proceeding from the settlement of nature, may be as compatible with the due and reasonable success of my endeavours and prayers (as inconsiderable a part of the world as I am), as with any other thing or phænomenon how great soever.

---

* Things come to pass ἐκαὶ φυσικὰ ἰκαλεῖνται ἐκαὶ τὸ λέγειν, and even τὰ σφωνιτά ἀνακάλυπτει οὐχ ἀλλὰ καὶ λέγειν. Plot. That in Seneca looks something like this: Spec. dic, numina non mitti a Jove, sed tota omnia disposita, us ea stiam, que ab ildo non sunt, sine fine ratione non hact: quae illius est.—Nam est Jupiter illa nunc non facit, sed creditur. * This seems to be what Enseblins means, when he says, that Divine providence does (among other things) τοῖς οὐχ ἔμμαθας τῷ ἂν ὅσπερ. * Τὸν ἑαυτόν την ἑαυτῷ μακεν ἑαυτῷ, in Philo's words.
Perhaps my meaning may be made more intelligible thus. Suppose M (some man) certainly to foreknow some way or other that, when he should come to be upon his death-bed, L would petition for some particular legacy; in a manner so earnest and humble, and with such a good disposition, as would render it proper to grant his request: and upon this M makes his last will, by which he devises to L that which was to be asked, and then locks up the will; and all this many years before the death of M, and whilst L had yet no expectation or thought of any such thing. When the time comes, the petition is made, and granted; not by making any new will, but by the old one already made, and without alteration: which legacy had, notwithstanding that, never been left had the petition never been preferred. The grant may be called an effect of a future act, and depends as much upon it, as if it had been made after the act. So if it had been foreseen, that L would not so much as ask, and had therefore been left out of the will; this preterition would have been caused by his carriage, tho much later than the date of the will. In all this is nothing hard to be admitted, if M be allow'd to foreknow the case. And thus the prayers, which good men offer to the All-knowing God, and the neglects of others, may find fitting effects already forecasted in the course of nature. Which possibility may be extended to the labors of men, and their behaviour in general.

It is obvious to every one's observation, that in fact particular men are very commonly (at least in some measure) rewarded or punish'd by the general laws and methods of nature. The natural (tho not constant) attendents and consequences of virtue are peace, health, and felicity; of vice, loss of philosophical pleasures, a diseased body, debts, and difficulties. Now then, if B be virtuous and happy, C vicious and at last miserable, laboring under a late and fruitless remorse; tho this comes to pass through the natural ten'dence of things, yet these two cases, being suppos'd such as require, the one that B should be favor'd, the other that C should suffer for his wickedness, are as effectually provided for, as if God exerted his power in some peculiar way on this occasion.

3. It is not impossible, that men, whose natures and actions are foreknown, may be introduced into the world in such times, places, and other circumstances, as that their acts and behaviour may not only coincide with the general plan of things, but also answer many private cases too. The planets and bigger parts of the world

---

* The case here put may perhaps supply an answer to that, which is said in Mis'm. maif. Berak. יזרא לשבירתה ו_blend, מברך ונברך.

b If Plato had not been born in the time of Socrates, in all probability he had not been what he was. And therefore, with Laërtius's favor, he might have reason to thank God, quod Athenienius [natus effer], quod temporibus Socratis. Just as M. Antonius ascribes, gratefully, to the Gods to γυναιεσι απολάβοιν, Τέτικον, Μαγίας.
Truths relating to the Deity.

we cannot but see are disposed into such places and order, that they together make a noble system, without having their natural powers of attraction (or the force of that which is equivalent to attraction) or any of the laws of motion restrained or altered. On the contrary, being rightly placed, they by the observation of those become subservient to the main design. Now why may there not be in the Divine mind something like a projection of the future history of mankind, as well as of the order and motions and various aspects of the greater bodies of the world? And then why should it not be thought possible for men, as well as for them, by some secret law, tho of another kind, or rather by the presence and guidance of an unseen governing power, to be brought into their places in such a manner as that by the free use of their faculties, the conjunctions and oppositions of their interests and inclinations, the natural influence and weight of their several magnitudes and degrees of parts, power, wealth, &c. they may conspire to make out the scheme? And then again, since generals consist of particulars, and in this scheme are comprehended the actions and cases of particular men, they cannot be so situated respectively among the rest of their species as to be serviceable to the principal intention, and fall properly into the general diagram of affairs, unless they and their several acting and cases do in the main correspond one to another, and fit among themselves, or at least are not inconsistent.

Here is no implication of any contradiction or absurdity in all this: and therefore it may at least be fairly supposed. And if so, it will follow, that a particular providence may be compatible with the natural freedom of men’s actions. Such a supposition is certainly not beyond the power of an almighty, perfect Being: it is moreover worthy of Him, and what they, who can dwell a while upon those words, and take their import, must believe.

The ancients I am persuaded had some such thoughts as these. For they were generally fatalists, and yet do not seem to have thought, that they were not masters of their own actions.

4. It is not impossible (for this is all that I contend for here), that many things, suitable to several cases, may be brought to pass by means of secret and sometimes sudden influences on our minds, or the minds of other men, whose acts may affect us. For instance; if the case should require, that N should be de-

* Plato and the Stoics, ap. Plut. make fate to be θεύματοι οὐκ ἔσχάλων καὶ ταυταγμένοι, εἰς γεύματος να ἐπηλέσαν, τίς ἐκ τινά ἐλασμάτων ἐπηνεχόμεναι.  
* The Heathen were of this opinion; otherwise Homer could have had no opportunity of introducing their Deities as he doth. τῷ θεώ ἐν θεῷ ἐφήθη ταῦτα γλαυκόττας Αθηνᾶς Ἀθηνῆς Ἀθηνίων τρίης Φεβαῖας and the like often. Plutarch explains these passages thus. Οὐκ ἐπηλέσαν τοις ὀμηνοτοι [Ormns-] ἵ ἐτι, ἀλλ’ ἐκ τινά τομαῖον ἐνεχομένων ὕπο οἰκῶν ἐγ-

μαχηθέντων, ἀλλ’ ἀρατούς ἀράμων ἀναγωγίας and afterwards the Gods are said to help men, ἢ ζωγράφω τὰ πρακτικὰ τῷ προαιρετικῷ ἐγγέλλον τῷ θεῷ θανατοίς θανατοίς ἐπισκέψεως, ἡ τωτικὰν ἀνεφείδως καὶ ἑξήμερον.
lived from some threatening ruin, or from some misfortune, which would certainly befall him, if he should go such a way at such a time, as he intended: upon this occasion some new reasons may be presented to his mind, why he should not go at all, or not then, or not by that road; or he may forget to go. Or, if he is to be deliver'd from some dangerous enemy, either some new turn given to his thoughts may divert him from going where the enemy will be, or the enemy may be after the same manner diverted from coming where he shall be, or his [the enemy’s] resentment may be qualified, or some proper method of defence may be suggested, or degree of resolution and vigor excited. After the same manner not only deliverances from dangers and troubles, but advantages and successes may be conferred: or on the other side, men may, by way of punishment for crimes committed, incur mischiefs and calamities. I say, these things and such like may be. For since the motions and actions of men, which depend upon their wills, do also depend upon their judgments, as these again do upon the present appearances or non-appearances of things in their minds; if a new prospect of things can be any way produced, the lights by which they are seen altered, new forces and directions impress upon the spirits, passions exalted or abated, the power of judging invivend or debilitated, or the attention taken off, without any suspension or alteration of the standing laws of nature, then without that new volitions, designs, measures, or a cession of thinking may also be produced, and thus many things prevented, that otherwise would be, and many brought about, that would not. But that this is far from being impossible, seems clear to me. For the operations of the mind following in great measure the present disposition of the body, some thoughts and designs, or absences of mind, may proceed from corporal causes, acting according to the common laws of matter and motion themselves; and so the case may fall in with n. 2. or they may be occasioned by something said or done by other men; and then the case may be brought under n. 3. or they may be caused by the suggestion, and impulse, or other silent communications of some spiritual being; perhaps the Deity himself. For that such imperceptible influences and still whispers may be, none of us all can positively deny: that is, we cannot know certainly, that there are no such things. On the contrary, I believe there are but few of them who have made observations upon themselves and their affairs, but must, when they reflect on life past and the various adventures and events in it, find many instances, in which their usual judgment and sense of things cannot but seem to themselves to have been overruled, they knew not by what, nor how, nor why (i.e. they have done things, 

* Σφαδις [ἡ μικρήθης] δὲν εἰδ' ἵππος, ἵπποι δὲ τὰ Φάραμακα, Ποταμῷ τῷ Αφάραμακτω [χίλια] ἔσεντας, θύρας Καλλιδείδας, who devised the poison for Ptolemaus, in Lucian.
Truths relating to the Deity.

which afterwards they wonder how they came to do); and that these actions have had consequences very remarkable in their history. I speak not here of men demoted with wine, or enchanted with some temptation: the thing holds true of men even in their sober and more considering scenes.

That there may be possibly such inspirations of new thoughts and counsels may perhaps further appear from this; that we so frequently find thoughts arising in our heads, into which we are led by no discourse, nothing we read, no clue of reasoning; but they surprise and come upon us from we know not what quarter. If they proceeded from the mobility of spirits, straggling out of order, and fortuitous affections of the brain, or were of the nature of dreams, why are they not as wild, incoherent, and extravagant as they are? Not to add, that the world has generally acknowledged, and therefore seems to have experienced some assistance and directions given to good men by the Deity; that men have been many times infatuated, and left to themselves, 

If any one should object, that if men are thus over-ruled in their actions, then they are deprived of their liberty, the answer is, that man is a free agent, he may not be free as to every thing. His freedom may be restrained, and he only accountable for those acts, in respect of which he is free.

If this then be the case, as it seems to be, that men's minds are susceptible of such insinuations and impressions, as frequently by ways unknown do affect them, and give them an inclination toward this or that, how many things may be brought to pass by these means without fixing and refixing the laws of nature: any more than they are unfixed, when one man alters the opinion of another by throwing a book, proper for that purpose, in his way? I say, how many things may be brought about thus, not only in regard of our selves, but other people, who may be concerned in our actions, either immediately, or in time through perhaps many intermediate events? For the prosperity or impropriety of a man, or his fate here, does not entirely depend upon his own prudence or imprudence, but in great measure upon his situation among the rest of mankind, and what they do. The natural effect of his management meeting with such things, as are the natural effects of the actions of other men, and being blended with them, the result may be something not intended or foreseen.

5. There possibly may be, and most probably are beings invisible, and superior in nature to us, who may by other means be in many respects ministers of

---

\[a\] When Hannibal was in sight of Rome, non ausus est obidere. S. Hier. — Sed religionem quadam affinitatem, quod dicere, capienda urbibus modo non daretur voluntatem, modo non daretur facultatem, in refusat. S. Orat. Schol.

\[b\] Non enim euniam in potestate est quid veniat in mentem. S. Aust.

\[c\] They who called Simonides out from Scopas and his company, as if it were to speak with him, lived his life. The story known.

God’s
God's providence, and authors under Him of many events to particular men, without altering the laws of nature. For it implies no contradiction or absurdity to say there are such beings: on the contrary we have the greatest reason to think what has been intimated already; that such imperfect beings, as we are, are far below the top of the scale. Tho pictures of spiritual beings cannot be drawn in our imagination, as of corporeal; yet to the upper and reasoning part of the mind the idea of spiritual substance may perhaps be as clear, as that of corporeity. For what penetrability is, must be known just as well as what impenetrability is: and so on.

And since it has been proved (p. 77, 78), that all corporeal motions proceed originally from something incorporeal, it must be as certain, that there are incorporeal substances, as that there is motion. Befide, how can we tell but that there may be above us beings of greater powers, and more perfect intellects, and capable of mighty things, which yet may have corporeal vehicles as we have, but finer and invisible? Nay, who knows but that there may be even of these many orders, rising in dignity of nature, and amplitude of power, one above another? It is no way below the philosophy of these times, which seems to delight in enlarging the capacities of matter, to assert the possibility of this. But however, my own defects sufficiently convince me, that I have no pretension to be one of the first rank, or that which is next under the All-perfect.

Now then, as we our selves by the use of our powers do many times interpose and alter the course of things within our sphere from what it would be, if they were left entirely to the laws of motion and gravitation, without being said to alter those laws; so may these superior beings likewise in respect of things within their spheres, much larger be sure, the least of them all, than ours is: only with this difference, that as their knowledge is more extensive, their intellects purer, their reason better, they may be much properer instruments of Divine providence with respect to us, than we can be with respect one to another, or to the animals below us. I cannot think indeed, that the power of these beings is so large, as to alter or suspend the general laws of the world; or that the world is like a bungling piece of clock-work, which requires to be oft set backward or forward by them; or that they can at pleasure change their condition to ape us, or inferior beings; and consequently am not apt hastily to credit stories of portents, &c. such as cannot be true, unless the natures of things and their manner of being be

---

* They, who believe there is nothing but what they can handle or see (οι οὖν ἥκοι ἀδέρφοι μετὶ, δ. οὐ δὲ γνώσις) ἀνεξίπτωτον τερμαῖον ἄλλος, ἀνεξίπτωτον, μάλιστα ἄλλος. Plato reckon to be void of all philosophy, φαντασία, ἀναφθονία, κατάθυμα, μάλιστα ἄλλος.
Truths relating to the Deity.

quite reversed: yet (I will repeat it again) as men may be so placed as to become, even by the free exercise of their own powers, instruments of God's particular providence to other men (or animals); so may we well suppose, that these higher beings may be so distributed through the universe, and subject to such an economy (tho I pretend not to tell what that is), as may render them also instruments of the same providence; and that they may, in proportion to their greater abilities, be capable, consistently with the laws of nature, some way or other, tho not in our way, of influencing human affairs in proper places.

Lastly, what I have ventured to lay before you I would not have to be understood, as if I peremptorily asserted things to be just in this manner, or pretended to impose my thoughts upon any body else: my design is only to shew how I endeavour to help my own narrow conceptions. There must be other ways above my understanding, by which such a Being as God is may take care of private cases without interrupting the order of the universe, or putting any of the parts of it out of their channels. We may be sure He regards every thing as being what it is; and that therefore His laws must be accommodated to the true genius's and capacities of those things, which are affected by them. The purely material part of the world is governed by such, as are suited to the state of a being, which is insensible, passive only, and everywhere and always the same: and these seem to be simple and few, and to carry natural agents into one constant road. But intelligent active, free beings must be under a government of another form. They must, truth requiring it, be consider'd as beings, who may behave themselves as they ought, or not; as beings susceptive of pleasure and pain; as beings, who not only owe to God all that they are or have, but are (or may be) sensible of this, and to whom therefore it must be natural upon many occasions to supplicate Him for mercy, defence, direction, assistance; lastly, as beings, whose cases admit great variety: and therefore that influence, by which He is present to them, must be different from that, by which gravitation and common phenomena are produced in matter. This seems to be as it were a public influence, the other private, answering private cases, and prayers; this to operate directly upon the body, the other more especially upon the mind, and upon the body by its &c. But I forbear, lest I should go too far out of my depth: only adding in general, that God cannot put things so far out of His own power, as that He should not for ever govern transactions and events in His own world, nor can perfect knowledge and power ever want proper means to achieve what
what is fit to be done. So that, tho' what I have advanced should stand for nothing, there may still be a particular providence notwithstanding the forementioned difficulty. And then, if there may be one, it will unavoidably follow, that there is one: because in the description of providence, p. 97, nothing is supposed with respect to particular cases, but that they should be provided for in such a manner as will at last agree best with reason; and to allow, that this may be done, and yet say, that it is not done, implies a blasphemy that creates horror; it is to charge the Perfect being with one of the greatest imperfections, and to make Him not so much as a reasonable being.

I conclude then, that it is as certain, that there is a particular providence, as that God is a Being of perfect reason. For if men are treated according to reason, they must be treated according to what they are: the virtuous, the just, the compassionate, &c. as such, and the vicious, unjust, cruel, &c. according to what they are: and their several cases must be taken and considered as they are: which cannot be done without such a providence.

Against all this it has been, as one might well expect, objected of old, that things do not seem to be dealt according to reason, virtuous and good men very oft laboring under adversity, pains, perfections, whilst vicious, wicked, cruel men prevail and flourish. But to this an answer (in which I shall a little further explain my self) is ready. It might be taken out of that, which has been given to the Manichean objection under prop. VII. But I shall here give one more direct: and let that and this be mutually assailing and supplements each to the other. 1. We are not always certain, who are good, who wicked. If we trust to fame and reports, these may proceed, on the one hand, from partial friendship, or flattery; on the other, from ill-natured surmises and constructions of things, envy, or malice; and on either, from small matters aggrandized, from mistake, or from the unskilful relation even of truth itself. Opposite parties make a merit of blackening their adversaries, and brightening their friends.

1 Si current [Diq] homines, bene bonis sit, maëli malis: quod mune abest. Ap. Cic. The Jews, who call this cafe ἄρμαντας, have written many things about it, to be seen in their books: Mo nembok. S. Igzuar. Men. hamma. Nahh. ab. &c. So have the Heathen philosophers too; Seneca, Plutarch, Plato., Simplicius, al. But the answers of neither are always just. God forbid that should be thought true, which is affected by Glauco, ap. Plat. that the just, if they had Gyges's ring, would do as the unjust, and οὕτω µάλιν τοιούτου καθήκονσιν, ὡς τις ἄριστος ἄνθρωπος. Or that in S. Ebiasid, and Men. hamma. Τάρκον ἄριστος τοιούτου. The reason assigned for this case in another place is something better: וֹרֶשְׁלָם אֶנְמָּה אֶשָּׁנָה לְהַבָּשָׁנָה לְהַבָּשָׁנָה וֹרֶשְׁלָם. But the way of salving it in Nifha. bhaiy. by וירם, or what the Caballists call וירם, is worst of all. 2 Cadi & Rhipheus, iustifimus unus Qui suit in Tensris, R servantissimus aquis. Dis alter visum. Virg. ³ Virtutes ipsas invertimus. Hor.
Truths relating to the Deity.

Undeservedly and unmeasurably: and to idle companions and gossips it is diversi-
on, and what makes the principal part of their conversation*, to rehearse the
characters of men, dressed up out of their own dreams and inventions. And beside
all this, the good or bad repute of men depends in great measure upon mean
people, who carry their stories from family to family, and propagate them very
fast: like little insects, which lay apace, and the less the faster. There are
few, very few, who have the opportunity and the will and the ability to repre-
sent things truly b. Beside the matters of fact themselves there are many cir-
cumstances which, before sentence is passed, ought to be known and weighed,
and yet scarce ever can be known, but to the person himself who is concerned.
He may have other views, and another sense of things, than his judges have: and
what he understands, what he feels, what he intends, may be a secret confined
to his own breast. A man may through bodily indispositions and faults in his
constitution, which it is not in his power to correct, be subject to starts and
inadvertencies, or obnoxious to snare, which he cannot be aware of; or through
want of information or proper help he may labor under invincible errors, and
act as in the dark: in which cases he may do things, which in themselves
wrong, and yet be innocent, or at least rather to be pitied, than censured with
severity. Or perhaps the censor, notwithstanding this kind of men talk as if
they were infallible, may be mistaken himself in his opinion, and judge that to
be wrong, which in truth is right c. Nothing more common than this. Ignor-
rant and superstitious wretches measure the actions of lettered and philosophical
men by the tale of their nurses or illiterate parents and companions, or by the
fashion of the country: and people of differing religions judge and con-
demn each other by their own tenents; when both of them cannot be in the

---

* 'Ovovγε, ἵνα τις ἀφαίρεσις, ἄλογον τε ἀληθείας ἐκ τῆς τύχης ὑπὸ τοίνυς τῶν

b Therefore, with Socrates in Plato, we ought not much to care what the multitude [οἱ πολιτείας] lay of us, ἀληθείας, ἢ τι ἐπαινεῖ, ἢ τι ἐπιθύμει, ἢ τι ῥίξει, ἢ τι ἱστῇ ἡ ἀληθεία. Or, v. v. he may judge that to be right, which
is wrong. This seems to be pretty much the case in that enumeration of good men, who suffered,
ap. Cic. Cur duo Scipiones, fortissimos & optimos viros, in Hiππανια Pannus oppressit? Cur Maximus ex-
tulit filium consularis? Cur Marcellum Hannibal interemiet, &c. For here they are reckoned boni, only
because they were fortis; that is, because they had been zealous and successful instruments in con-
quering and destroying them, who happen to be so unfortunate as to be neighbours to the Romans,
upon various pretences indeed, but in truth only to enlarge their own territories. Is this to be good?
Doth it derive such a particular observation, that E. Maximus buried a son, after he had been Conful
too? How doth it appear, that Marcellus was a better man than Hannibal? Is it such a wonder, if
they, who spend their lives in slaughter, should at length be slain themselves? If the margin permit-
ted, more remarks might be made upon this catalogue: as also some upon that, which follows in
the same place, of others, quibus improbis optime evenit.
right, and it is well if either of them are. To which may be added, that the true characters of men must chiefly depend upon the unseen part of their lives; since the truest and best religion is most private, and the greatest wickedness endeavours to be so. Some are modest, and hide their virtues; others hypocritical, and conceal their vices under shews of sanctity, good nature, or something that is specious. So that it is many times hard to discern, to which of the two forts, the good or the bad, a man ought to be aggregated. 2. It rarely happens, that we are competent judges of the good or bad fortune of other people. That, which is disagreeable to one, is many times agreeable to another, or disagreeable in a less degree. The misery accruing from any infliction or bad circumstance of life is to be computed as in p. 32, 33: or according to the resistence and capacity of bearing it, which it meets with. If one man can carry a weight of four or five hundred pounds as well as another can the weight of one hundred, by these different weights they will be equally loaded. And so the same poverty or disgrace, the same wounds, &c. do not give the same pain to all men. The apprehension of but a vein to be open is worse to some, than the apparatus to an execution is to others: and a word may be more terrible and sensible to tender natures, than a sword is to the faceless, or intrepid breed. The fame may be said with respect to injoyments: men have different tastes, and the use of the same things does not beget equal pleasures in all. Beside, we scarce ever know the whole case. We do not see the inward stings and secret pains, which many of those men carry about them, whose external splendor and flourishing estate is so much admired by beholders, nor perhaps sufficiently consider the silent pleasures of a lower fortune, arising from temperance, moderate desires, easy reflections, a consciousness of knowledge and truth; with other pleasures of the mind, much greater many times than those of the body. Before one can pronounce another happy or otherwise, he should know all the other's

---

\* Vita poßìïëmus celatís (in Lucr.) may be aptly applied to the wicked. Multi famam, conscientiam pauci veréntur. Plin. jun.  
\* Neg. mala vel bona, qua vulsus putat: multi, qui consilii adversis videntur, beati; ac pleriq; quanquam magnis per opes, miservimi, &c. Tacit.  
\* Feliciorem in Mecanatem putas, cuj; amoribus anxio, & nonse uxorí quodidíà repudias defenti, fomnus per symphoniam cautam, ex longinquo bene résonantiam, quartur? Mero se licet sopiat, --- ; tam vigilabit in piumá, quàm illki [Regulus]; in crucé, --- ; ut dubium [now] fit, an electione sati data. plurès Reguli nafci, quam Mecanatos velin. Sen. Ifii, quos rec felicibus apicis, ò non quas occurrerunt; sed quàm latent, visèritis, miseri sunt. Id.  
\* Archimedes, having found the way of solving a problem (examinandis, an corona aurea profis effect), ran in an eclipset out of the bath, crying Euclides: but who ece. heard of a man, that after a luxurious meal, or the injoyment of a woman, ran out thus, crying Viðeòxa, or Πειθόμαι. Plut.
Truths relating to the Deity.

injoyments and all his sufferings a. Many misfortunes are compensated b by some larger endowments, or extraordinary felicities in other respects. But suppose the pleasures of some, and the sufferings of some others, to be just as they appear: still we know not the consequences of them c. The pleasures of those men may lead to miseries greater than those of the latter, and be in reality the greater misfortune: and, again, the sufferings of these may be preludes to succeeding advantages d. So that indeed we know not how to name these outward appearances of particular men, nor which to call happiness, which the contrary; unless we knew the inward sense of the persons themselves, all their true circumstances, and what will be hereafter consequent upon their present success or adversity. 3. Men ought to be considerd as members of families, nations, mankind, the universe, from which they cannot be separated: and then from the very condition of their being it will appear, that there must be great inequalities e; that the innocent cannot but be sometimes involved in general calamities or punishments, nor the guilty but share in public prosperities f; and that the good of the whole society or kind is to be regarded preferably to the present pleasure of any individual, if they happen to clash g. Lastly, if the virtuous man has undergone more in this life, than it would be reasonable he should suffer, if there was no other; yet those sufferings may not be unreasonable, if there is another. For they may be made up to him by such injoyments, as it would be reasonable for him to prefer, even with those previous mortifications, before the pleasures of this life with the loss of them. And moreover, sometimes the only way to the felicities of a better state may lie through dark and difficult paffes, discipline to some men being necessary, to bring them to reflect, and to force them into such methods as may produce in them proper improvements; such, as otherwise and of themselves they would never have fallen into. On the other side, if vicious and wicked men do prosper and make a figure; yet it is possible their sufferings hereafter may be such, as that the excess of

a Fatis contraria fata rependens. Virg. See what Pliny writes of Agrippa, the other great favorite and minister of Augustus, whom he reckons to be the only instance of felicity among them who were called Agrippa. Is quos adverfa pedum valutudine, misera juventa, exercito aequo inter arma mortuasque, inficincis terris feripe omnis, praetera brevitate sui, in tormentis adulteriorum conjugas, focias, prægravi servitio, suas augurium praepostéri natalis excipitatur.
b οφθαλμον γρ τιμηροθ,Dio h νευκον ουκον. Hom. c Zeno reckoned he made a good voyage, when he was shipwrecked. Diog. L.
d If a good man labors under poverty, sickness, or the like, in ιζώνως πι τιλπινον εικεδαβοιτη, for how can he be neglected of God, who studies according to his poor abilities to be like Him? Plato.

e Who blames a drama, because all the persons are not heroes? Plut. ιζώνως πι τιλπινον εικεδαβοιτη, for how can he be neglected of God, who studies according to his poor abilities to be like Him? Plato.
f Μις διπ τινα ολος Σουριους, εις ουκον. Abarb. & pass.
them above their past enjoyments may be equal to the just mulct of their villanies and wickedness. And further, their worldly pleasures (which must be supposed to be such as are not philosophical, or moderated and governed by reason and habits of virtue) being apt to fill the mind, and ingross the whole man, and by that means to exclude almost all right reflexions, with the proper applications of them, may be the very causes of their ruin; whilst they leave them under such defects at the end of their days, as we shall see afterward tend to unhappiness.

If what is objected be in many instances true, this only infers the necessity of a future state: that is, if good and bad men are not respectively treated according to reason in this life, they may yet be so treated, if this and another to follow be taken together into the account. And perhaps it is (as I have been always apt to think) in order to convince us of the certainty of a future state, that instances of that kind have been so numerous. For he must not only be guilty of blasphemy, but reduced to the greatest absurdity, who, rather than he will own there is such a state, is forced to make God an unreasonable Being: which I think amounts to a strong demonstration, that there is one. But of that more hereafter.

XIX. If we would behave ourselves as being what we cannot but be sensible we are, towards GOD as being what He is according to the foregoing propositions; or, if we would endeavour to behave our selves towards him according to truth, we must observe these following and the like particulars.

1. We must not pretend to represent Him by any picture or image whatsoever. Because this is flatly to deny his incorporeity, incomprehensible nature, &c.

2. We ought to be so far from doing this, that even the language we use, when we speak of Him, and especially of His positive nature and essential properties, ought not only to be chosen with the utmost care, but also to be understood in the sublime sense: and the same is true with respect to our thoughts, mut. mutand. or thus:

---

a Divine providence and immortality of the soul must stand and fall together. Θεία Γεν. οὐκ ἕξω καταστάναι ἑπέκαταν. Plat.

b Τάτον ταυτόν ἔστιν ὅταν ὁ οἴκος οὐσίας ὁ ἅγιος ὁ θεός πρὸς ἡ προσωπεία μὲν ἑλκιότροπος ἐν τῷ θείῳ καταστάνατον. Hieroc.

c Sure no body ever did in reality pretend to do this. According to Diog. L. the Egyptians set up ἄγάλλατα in their temples τῷ μὲν ἔστιν ὁ ὄστρακον προφθομό: for that very reason, because they did not know his shape; or, how to represent Him. Their images seem to have been symbols or hieroglyphics, expressing something of their sense or opinion concerning Him. For, as Maimonides observes, no man ever did or ever will worship an idol, made of metal, stone, or wood, as that Being who made heaven and earth.

d Non est dubium, quin religio nulla sit, ubicunque simulacrum est. Laft. έις γόνειν σύμματι τὸ σωματικός τι ἑντολή, ἐν τῷ γόνειν σύμματι τὸ ταῖς ἑντολαῖς ψυχασίαις τειληείουσαι ἑν τῷ πάσας ἑν τῷ ἑντολής ψυχασίαις ἔτη, ἐν τῷ ἑντολής γυναίκας δίκαιας κείνες. S. Bas.
we must endeavour to think and speak of Him in the most reverent terms and most proper manner we are able; keeping withal this general conclusion, and as it were habitual reflexion in our minds, that, tho' we do the best we can, He is still something above all our conceptions; and desiring, that our faint expressions may be taken as aiming at a higher and more proportionable meaning. To do otherwise implies not only, that His mode of existence and essentiaal attributes are comprehensible by us, but also (which is more) that our words and phraes, taken from among our selves and the objects of our faculties, are adequate expressions of them: contrary to truth.

To explain myself by a few instances. When we ascribe mercy to God, or implore His mercy, it must not be understood to be mercy like that, which is called compassion in us. For tho' this be a very distinguishing affection in human nature, to which we are made subject for good reasons, the constitution of the world and circumstances of our present state making it necessary for us to compassion those each the sufferings of another; yet it is accompanied with uneasiness, and must therefore not be ascribed strictly to God in that sense, in which it is used when ascribed to our selves. It perhaps may not be amis to call it Divine mercy, or the like; to distinguish it: and to shew, that we mean something, which, tho' in our low way of speaking and by way of analogy we call it by the same name, is yet in the perfect nature of God very different. Or we may consider it in general as the manner, in which God respects poor suppliants and proper objects for their good. For certainly the respect or relation, which lies between God, considered as an unchangeable Being, and one that is humble and supplicates and endeavours to qualify himself for mercy, cannot be the same with that, which lies between the same unchangeable God and one that is obstinate, and will not supplicate, or endeavour to qualify himself: that is, the same thing, or Being, cannot respect opposite and contradictory characters in the same manner; him who does behave himself as before, and him who does not. Therefore when we apply to the mercy of God, and beg of him to pity our infirmities and wants, the design is not to move His affections, as good speakers move their auditors by the pathetic arts of rhetoric, or hearty beggars theirs by importunities and tears; but to express our own sense of our selves and circumstances in such a manner, as may render us more capable of the emanations of Divine goodness, and fit:

---

*a* ὁπερεποτές ἀπραξα ὑπερτείσ. S. Chrys.  
*b* We use them (and speak, as the Jews every where inculcate, יְשָׁרָא וּבָּשָׁר) only ἅτοιχα ἀληθινοὶ προσφύγοις —— τὰ ἐκφέρτα παρ' ἡμῖν ἄνθρωποι ἁπατοφόροις. Plot.  
*c* Mollisima corda Humano generi dare se natura fatetur, Qua la-chrymas dedis, hac nostra pars optima senect. —separat hoc nos à græge mutorum, &c. Juv.  
*d* The ratio of G to M + q is different from that of G to M − q: and yet G remains unaltered.
to receive such instances of His beneficence, as to us may seem to be the effects of compassion, tho they proceed not from any alteration in the Deity. For it may be, and no doubt is agreeable to perfect reason always and without alteration, that he, who labors under a sense of his own defects, honestly uses his best endeavours to mend what is amiss, and (among other things) flies for relief to Him, upon whom his being and all that he has do depend, should have many things granted him, which are not given to the careless, obdurate, unasking a part of mankind; tho his expressions and manner of address, with all his care, are still inadequate, and below the Divine nature. In short, by our applications we cannot pretend to produce any alteration in the Deity, but by an alteration in ourselves we may alter the relation or respect lying between him and us.

As God is a pure, uncompounded Being, His attributes of mercy, justice, &c. cannot be as we conceive them: because in him they are one. Perhaps they may more properly be called together Divine reason: which, as it exerts itself upon this or that occasion, is by us variously denominated.

Here it must not be forgot, that mercy or mercies are many times taken for advantages or benefits enjoined by us: and then they are properly ascribed to God, from whom they proceed as the effects of His beneficence and providence.

When we speak of the knowledge of God, we must not mean, that He knows things in the way that we do: that any intention or operation of His mind is requisite to produce it: that He apprehends things by any impressions made upon Him: that He reasons by the help of ideas: or even that the knowledge, which in us is most intuitive and immediate, does in any degree come up to the mode in which He knows things. We must rather intend, in general, that there is nothing, of which He is, or can be ignorant: which has been said already; and is, I am afraid, as much as we can safely say.

When glory, honor, praise b are given to God; or He is said to do anything for His own glory, or we to propose the glory of His name in what we do; those words should not be taken as flandering for that kind of glory and applause, which is so industriously sought, and capriciously c distributed among us mortals, and which I will take this opportunity to handle a little more largely, in order to give here a specimen of the world, and fave that trouble in another place. Among us some are celebrated

---

a Πως η μεν, δειν το της φθορας υπερισσε ποι και δια της ευφυεις Θεος; Hieroc.

b Των καθιστων οι και ειναι πανω, και κατα μεικα της ελεον. Therefore ο Θεος κυριακνα are above praise. Arist.

Oι των Θεων ελεοντες, γελων την ημιν υποις αντις εξεστες. Andron. Rh.

c Clean, only a songster [οδες], had a statue at Thebes, kept as sacred, when Pindar himself had none. See the story in Athenaeus.
for small matters, either through the ignorance of the multitude, the partiality of a faction, the advantage of great friendships, the usual deference paid to men in eminent stations, or mere good luck; and others for achieving such things, as if they were duly weighed, and people were not imposed upon by false notions, first introduced in barbarous times, and since polished and brought into fashion by historians, poets, and flatterers, would appear rather to be a disgrace to savages than any recommendation of rational and civilized natures. Strength, and courage, and beauty, and parts, and birth are follow'd with encomiums and honors, which, tho' they may be the felicities and privileges of the possessor, cannot be their merit, who received them gratis, and contributed nothing themselves toward the acquisition of them: whilst real virtue and industry (which, even when unsuccessful, or oppreft by ill health or unkind fortune, give the truest title to praise) lie disregarded. Thirst after glory, when that is desired merely for its own sake, is founded in ambition and vanity: the thing itself is but a dream, and imagination, since, according to the differing humors and sentiments of nations and ages, the fame thing may be either glorious or inglorious: the effect of it, consider'd still by itself, is neither more health, nor estate, nor knowledge, nor virtue to him who has it; or if that be any thing, it is but what must cease when the man dies: and, after all, as it lives but in the breath of the people, a little fly envy or a new turn of things extinguishes it, or perhaps it goes quite out of itself. Men please themselves with notions of immortality, and fancy a perpetuity of fame secured to themselves by books and testimonies of historians: but, alas! it is a stupid delusion, when they imagin themselves present, and injoying that fame at the reading of their story after their death. And, beside, in reality the man is not known ever the more to posterity, because his name is transmitted to them: he doth not live, because his name does. When it is said, J. Cæsar subdued Gaul, beat Pompey, changed the Roman commonwealth into a monarchy, &c. it is the same thing, as to say, the conqueror of Pompey, &c. was Cæsar: that is, Cæsar and the conqueror of Pompey are the same thing; and Cæsar is as much known by the one designation as by the other. The amount then is only this: that the conqueror of Pompey conquers Pompey; or some body conquers Pompey.

What Seneca says of Alexander, is true of many an other hero: pro virtute eras felix semper.

Tamen alto Drorum sanguine, tanquam Eceis ipse aliquid, &c. Juv.

Gloria quantalibet quid erit, si gloriam tantum est? Juv.

Even the great pyramid in Egypt, tho' it still remains, hath not been able to preserve the true name of its builder; which is lost, one may justly wonder how.
The Religion of Nature. Sect. V.

pey; or rather, since Pompey is as little known now as Caesar, some body conquered some body a. Such a poor business is this boasted immortality b: and such, as has been here described, is the thing called glory among us! The notion of it may serve to excite them, who having abilities to serve their country in time of real danger, or want, or to do some other good, have yet not philosophy enough to do this upon principles of virtue, or to see through the glories of the world (just as we excite children by praising them; and as we see many good inventions and improvements proceed from emulation and vanity): but to discerning men this fame is mere air, and the next remove from nothing; what they despise, if not shun. I think there are two considerations, which may justify a desire of some glory or honor: and scarce more. When men have performed any virtuous actions, or such as fit easy upon their memories, it is a reasonable pleasure to have the testimony of the world added to that of their own consciences, that they have done well: and more than that, if the reputation acquired by any qualification or action may produce a man any real comfort or advantage (if it be only protection from the insolencies and injustice of mankind; or if it enables him to do by his authority more good to others), to have this privilege must be a great satisfaction, and what a wise and good man may be allowed, as he has opportunity, to propose to himself. But then he proposes it no farther than it may be useful: and it can be no farther useful than he wants it. So that, upon the whole, glory, praise, and the like, are either mere vanity, or only valuable in proportion to our defects and wants. If then those words are understood according to the import and value they have among men, how dares any one think, that the Supreme being can propose such a mean end to Himself as our praises? He can neither want, nor value them. Alexander, according to his taste of things, it may well be supposed would have been proud to have heard that he should be the subject of some second Homer, in whose sheets his name might be imbalmed for ages to come; or to have been celebrated at Athens, the mother of so many wits and captains: but sure even he, with all his vanity, could not propose to himself as the end of all his fatigues and dangers only to be praised by children, or rather by worms and insects, if they were capable of shewing some faint sense of his great-

---

a Τα όνοματα τοίς πάλαι παλασιομετανόιν των τρόπων των γλωσσιματικών Ιστ. Μ. Αντω.  
b Μερικοὶ προτέρου δείπνον αὐτοτικά ἱστορικά οἰκείων τάχησιν τειχοφορίαν, ἢ ἐκ ιδεώδεις και ἀπηκτ., ἢς τοιών προταμείοι τειχοφορία. Id.  
c Exconde Hamivalen: quos libros in husejusmo Invenies?  
d Μικροὶ τού ὑπαντούσον ἀναφόροι ἱστορικά, ἢς ὑπογεγείρονθε τὰ τειχοφορίαν προσφορίαν ἱστορικά.  
e Μακαρίων ἀντίον Ἀχίλλειων ὅτι κριτικῶν εὐκρης και τελευτώτες μετάλλευτα ἱστορικά. Phil.
nefs. And yet how far short is this comparison! In conclusion therefore, tho men have been accustomed to speak of the Deity in terms taken from princes, and such things as they have, in their weaknesses, admired; tho these are now incorporated into the language of Divines; and tho, considering what defects there are in our ways of thinking and speaking, we cannot well part with them all: yet we must remember to exalt the sense of them, or annex some mental qualification to the use of them. As, if God be said to do things for His own glory, the meaning I humbly conceive must be, that the transcendent excellence of His nature may be collected from the form of the world and administration of things in it; where there occur such marks of inexpressible wisdom and power, that He needed not to have given us greater, had He only intended His own glory: or something to this purpose. Or if the glory of what we do, be ascribed to Him; by this must be signified, that no glory is due to us, who have no powers, but what originally depend upon Him; and that we desire therefore to acknowledge Him to be the true author of all that, which is laudable in us.

When we thank God for any deliverance or injoynment, this must not be so understood, as if He could value Himself upon our ceremonious acknowledgments, or wanted complements, or any return from us. It is rather a profession of the sense we have of our wants and defects, of the beneficence of His nature, and the greatnes of seasonableness of the mercies received: an effort of a poor dependent being, who desires to own things, as far as he is able, to be what they are; and especially to beget in himself such a disposition of mind, as he ought to have towards his Almighty benefactor.

When we are said to be servants of God, or to serve Him, or do Him service, these phrases are not to be taken as when one man is said to be servant of another, or to do him service. For here it implies the doing of something, which is useful and beneficial to the man who is served, and what he wants, or fancies he wants: but nothing of what can be supposed in God, nor can we any way be profitable or serviceable to Him. To serve Him therefore must rather be to worship or adore Him (of which something by and by). And thus that word in another language, of which our serve is but the translation, is frequently used: as to serve

* As ἐφαρμος was celebrated by the birds, singing Μήγας ὡς ἔφαρμον. M. Tyr. 
a graven image is to worship the image; but cannot signify the doing of any thing, which may be serviceable or useful to the dead stone. Or to serve God may be understood in a sense something like that: Serve the king of Babylon. For they were said to serve the king of Babylon, who owned his authority, and lived according to his laws, tho' they did nothing, nor had any thing perhaps, which could be particularly serviceable to him: and so they may be said to serve God, or to be His servants, who live in a continual sense of His sovereign nature and power over them, and endeavour to conform themselves to the laws which He has imposed upon them. In these senses we pray, that we may live to serve Him: that is, we pray, that we may live to worship Him, and practice those laws of reason and virtue, to which rational natures are by Him subjected.

Many more reflexions might be made upon epithets and ways of speaking, introduced by custom, from rude antiquity, or by necessity following from the narrowness either of men's minds, or their language. It is plain, that love, anger, hands, eyes, &c. when ascribed to God, cannot import such bodily parts or passions as are found in us. Even the pronouns my, thy, his (as His people, His house, &c.) require much temper in the use of them.

3. We shall find ourselves bound to worship Him, in the best manner we can. For by worshipping Him I mean nothing but owning Him to be what He is, and ourselves to be what we are, by some more solemn and proper act: that is, by addressing ourselves as His dependents to Him as the Supreme cause, and Governor of the world, with acknowledgments of what we enjoy, petitions for what we really want, or He knows to be convenient for us, and the like. As if, ex. gr. I should in some humble and composed manner & pray to that Almighty being, upon whom depends the existence of the world, and by whose providence I have been preserved to this moment, and injoyed many undeserved advantages, that He would graciously accept my grateful sense and acknowledgments of all His beneficence toward me: that He would deliver me from the evil consequences of all my transgressions and follies: that He would induce me with such dispositions and powers, as may carry me innocently and safely
Truths relating to the Deity. 121

through all future trials; and may enable me upon all occasions to behave myself conformably to the laws of reason, piously, and wisely: that He would suffer no being to injure me, no misfortune to befall me, nor me to hurt myself by any error or misconduct of my own: that He would vouchsafe me clear and distinct perceptions of things; with so much health and prosperity, as may be good for me: that I may at least pass my time in peace, with contentment, and tranquillity of mind: and that, having faithfully discharged my duty to my family and friends, and endeavour to improve myself in virtuous habits and useful knowledge, I may at last make a decent and happy exit, and then find myself in some better state. Not to do this, or something like it, will certainly fall among those criminal omissions mentioned sect. I. prop. V. For never to acknowledge the enjoyments and privileges we have received, and hold of God, is in effect to deny that we receive them from Him; not to apply to Him for what we want is to deny, either our wants, or His power of helping us; and so on: all contrary to truth.

It must ever be owned, that no worship can be proportionable to the Divine nature and perfections; but yet that we are obliged to do what we can: therefore I added those words in the best manner we can. And it must be acknowledged further, that those words do not oblige us to be always at our devotions neither. For as in the worship of God we own Him to be what He is, so must we do this as not denying our selves to be what we are: beings not capable of bearing continual intention of mind; beings, that are encompassed with many wants, which by the constitution of our nature require to be supplied, not without care and activity join’d to our prayers; beings, that are made for many barmful enjoyments; beings, that have many offices to perform one for another; and beings, in whom, all things consider’d, it would be less respect to be constantly in the formal act of devotion, than it is to address our selves to Him with prepared minds, at certain times, or upon certain occasions. To be always thus engaged, if it could be, would be to make God what He is not: since it seems to suppose, that He wants it and we merit of Him by it; or that He is bound to give what we ask, without our endeavouring; or, at least, that He is a Being obnoxious to importunity and teasing. For these reasons I have also in the explication of my meaning inserted that limitation, by some solemn and proper act.

Tho’ every man knows best his own opportunities and circumstances, and therefore may be most able to judge for himself, how he may best perform this duty;
yet in general it may be said, that to the doing of it solemnly and in the best manner we can these things are required: an intent mind, proper times and places, a proper form of words, and a proper posture. For if the mind be absent, or attends not to what is said, it is not the man that prays: this is only as it were the noise of a machine, which is put into motion indeed, but without any consciousness of its own act. To repeat one’s prayers with moving lips, but alienated thoughts, is not to pray in the best manner we can: because it is not in a manner agreeable to what we are, or to truth. For this is to do it only as speaking, and not as thinking beings.

Upon this account it will be certain, that all times and places cannot be equally proper. Some times are ingrosled by the business of life, and some places lie exposed to interruptions. Those of retreat and silence ought to be fought, and, as far as fairly it may be, contrived. And for this further reason, because the farther we are removed from the notice of others, the clearer we stand of all ostentation: that is, the more we do it upon the score of truth and duty, and this is again, the more truly and dutifully we do it.

Our next care is a proper form of words. All prayer must either be vocal, or mental. Now even which is called mental can scarce be made without words, or something equivalent. (I believe, that even the deaf and dumb form to themselves some kind of language: I mean something, which supplies the room of language.) For thoughts in their naked state, devested of all words, and taken merely by themselves, are such subtle and fleeting things, as are scarce capable of making any appearance in the mind; at least of being detaind, compared together, and ranged into sentences. If a sentence may be so made up of sensible ideas as to subsist in the mind by the help of those images which remain in the phantasy, after the manner of a sentence express in pictures, or by hieroglyphics: yet such a sentence must be very imperfect, through the want of grammatical inflexions, particles, and other additions necessary to modify and connect the ideas, of which

122 The Religion of Nature. Sect. V.

Maim. כלא חנסו אליה זה בלב. S. Hbaf. and the like everywhere.

This in general is true: notwithstanding which I do not deny but there may be occlusions, when εἰδέν καλόν τὸν θεόν, ἀκόν ἄμαμι καὶ γνώστα μὴ καὶ ἀκόν—ἀϊσθαι ὡς μέτοικον τῆς νοοφορίας, τὸ πάν ἀπόρια τῆς εἰρήνης ἑλθεῖν ἐν γνώσει ἀλακάτων καὶ κείμενων καὶ ἑκατερόπος ἀρετής ἢς τῶν ἁριών τῆς διάνοιας, εἰ καὶ πρὸτεστατῇ τῶν ἔννοιας ἑξειδεῖσθαι ἐκ οὐσίας ἡμᾶς καὶ καθ’ ἐκείνα βαθύτατα ἐν χάρις πανδόξω ἀρεταῖς, καὶ σ. Chril.

Ὁ μὲν ἀραθοὺς ἐκοπίασε διαινάζοντα πρὸς ἄνθρωπον: ὡς δὲ διερτοῦς Γνώσει τῆς λόγου τοῦ προς τὸν ἔθν. Ph. Jud. Cogitation itself, according to Plato, is a kind of speech of the mind. For he calls τὸ διανοϊκόν (cognition) λόγον. ὡς ἀντὶ πρὸς ἄντι. And so Plotinus, ὁ ὑπὸ φανή λόγος μιμησάτο καὶ τὸν ψυχή.
Truths relating to the Deity. 123

(particles, &c.) there can be no images; and indeed little more than a set of disjointed conceptions, scarce exhibiting any sense without the assistance of language to fill up the blanks: and beside that, a prayer cannot be made out of such sentences as these. It is by the help of words, at least in great measure, that we even reason and discourse within our selves, as well as communicate our thoughts and discourse with others: and if any one observes himself well, he will find, that he thinks, as well as speaks in some language, and that in thinking he supposes and runs over silently and habitually these sounds, which in speaking he actually makes. This is the cause, why men can scarce write well in any language but their own: for whilst they think in their own, their style and speech, which is but the portraiture of their thoughts, must have the turn and genius of their own language, to what language soever the particular words belong. In short, words seem to be as it were bodies or vehicles to the sense or meaning, which is the spiritual part, and which without the other can hardly be fixt in the mind. Let any man try ingenuously, whether he can think over but that short prayer in Plato, Τα μιν ἑβαλάντες, et al., abstracted quite from those and all other words. One may apply his mind to the words of a prayer pronounced by another, and by taking them in make them his own; or he may be as it were his own reader, and pronounce them himself; or he may lay before him a prayer in writing, and so carry his eyes and his mind together through it; or he may go over a form of words imprinted on his memory; or he may put words together in his mind ex tempore: but still in all these ways words and language are used. And since to think over a set of words cannot be a more adequate manner of addressing to God (who neither speaks, nor thinks like us) than to speak it over and think too; and moreover, since the very sound of the words affects us, and, when the form is ready prepared, and the mind freed from the labor of composing, doth really help attention: I say, since this is the case, it must be better, when we have opportunity, to pronounce a prayer, than only to think it over. But then it should be spoken no louder (I mean when we pray privately), than just to make it audible to our selves. It is not upon God's account that we speak, since he would know even our thoughts:

* Multa sunt verba, quae, quaestarrant membra orationis, qua formari similitudine nulla possunt. Cic.

† Ρωμ. άρουν άνα γνωστών φράσεων, Nabh. ab. 'Alicib. 1. Ἀρρηνοεικισμός FBaer. That in S. Hbared. quoted out of the prophet, explains this thus: το καθαρεύοντας φράσεις τον χειρ αποθύμουνον, says Solomon in his prayer ap. Jof.

‡ This we find often among the Dinim of the Jews.

라בקות כלים ארי מאי: And R. Elaz. Aguari, having cited this passage, adds this to it: מאי: Arrau, saying that Solomon, in his prayer, as we see, I inferred from Shulbh. aruk. The same occurs in Or ḫṭadhē, &c. pas.

4 but
but it is upon our own account, and to make our adorations, tho imperfect at the
best, as compleat as we are able. (Which, by the way, is an answer to them,
who object against prayer the impertinence of talking to God.) This being pre-
vised, and it being found that we must make use of words, it cannot be denied
that we ought to use the best and properest we can. This cannot be done in extem-
poreaneous effusions: and therefore there must be forms premeditated; the best, that
we are capable of making or procuring, if we would worship God to the best of
our capacity. As a prayer ought to have all the marks of seriousness and being in
earnest, it ought to be the plainest, and at the same time is perhaps the hardesst of
all compositions. It ought to take in a general view of what we have injoyd, what
we want, what we have done, &c. and every thing ought to be express with
method, in phraes that are grave and pointing, and with such a true eloquence, as
ingages all our attention, and represents our deepesf sence, without affectation or need-
less repetitions. These considerations have caused me many times to wonder at
those men, who dispute against pre-conceived forms of prayer. They, who talk
so much of the spirit of prayer, seem to know but little of it.

As to the posture, that is best, which best expresss our humility, reverence, and
earnestness, and affects us most. Tho perhaps some regard is to be paid to the cu-
toms of the place where we are; or of our own country, to which we have been
most usd. Several nations may denote the same thing by different gestures: and
we may take these, as we do their words; i.e. as having that signification
which they put upon them.

Tho I have not hitherto mentiond it, there ought to be also a public worship
of the Deity. For a man may be considerd as a member of a society, and as such
he ought to worship God (if he has the opportunity of doing it: if there are
proper prayers used publicly, which he may refert to; and his health, &c. permit).
Or the society may be considerd as one body, that has common interests and
concerns, and as such is obliged to worship the Deity, and offer one common
prayer. Beside, there are many, who know not of themselves, how to pray;
perhaps cannot so much as read. These too must be taken as they are, and con-
sequently some time and place appointed, where they may have suitable prayers
red to them, and be guided in their devotions. And further, toward the keep-
ing mankind in order, it is necessary there should be some religion profeft, and
even establishd; which cannot be without some public worship. And were it not
for that sense of virtue, which is principally preserved (so far as it is preserved) by
national forms and habits of religion, men would soon lose it all, run wild, prey
upon one another, and do what else the world of savages do.
But how does this public worship, it may be demanded, comport with that retreat and privacy recommended above? Anf. I spoke there of prayer in general, to which those circumstances give a great advantage: but then they are recommended no farther, than they can be had, and the nature of the prayer admits of them. Excuse a short reflexion here, which if it be not directly for the purpose, is not altogether foreign to it. Tho' he who reads the form of public prayer reads it to all at the same time, that all may unite in one common act, which otherwise they could not do: yet still every particular person, who minds the prayers at all, has a separate perception of the words in his mind, and there he offers them, or the sense contained under them, with more or less application and order. And since no man can be said to pray any further than he does this; and it cannot be known to any body in the congregation beside himself, how far he does do it; his prayer is in reality as private, as if he was inclofed within a thousand walls. So that, though there are reasons for a public worship, yet I will venture to affirm, that all true prayer is private: and the true feat of it being in the mind, toward the interesting of whose powers all the circumstances of worship are mainly design'd to contribute, it may be said upon that account to be always made in the most retired and undiscovered of all retreats: nor can more be said in respect of a worship, which by the terms is in other respects public. A man may be present in a congregation, and either pray the same prayer in which others seem to join, or some other, or none at all, for ought any body there can tell beside himself.

I am not insensible how much I may expose myself by these things to the laughter of some, who are utter strangers to all this language. What a stir is here, say they, about praying? Who ever observed, that they who pray are more successful or happy, than they are who do not? Anf. All observations of this kind must be very lubricious and uncertain. We neither know what other men are inwardly and really, nor how they pray, nor what to call success. That, which is good for one, may be bad for another: and that, which seems good at present, may at length be evil, or introduce something which is so. And as to the prosperity of them,
who endeavour to worship God in a proper and reasonable manner, whatever it is, perhaps it might be less, if they did not; or their misfortunes might be greater: who can be certain of the contrary? If these gentlemen have any way of discovering it, I wish they would impart their secret. In the mean time sure they cannot expect, that even in the most imperfect sketch of natural religion the worship of the Deity should be omitted: that very thing, which hath been principally intended by the word religion.

4. And lastly, to deliver what remains, summarily; Rational beings, or they, to whom reason is the great law of their nature, if they would behave themselves as above, should consider in earnest, what a mighty being He is, who by the constitution of their nature has laid them under an obligation of being governed by it, and whose laws the dictates of right reason may be said to be. They ought to keep it well impressed upon their minds, that He is the being, upon whom their very existence depends: that it is He who superintends and administers the affairs of the world by His providence: that the effects of His power and influence are visible before their faces, and round about them, in all the phenomena of nature, not one of which could be without Him: that they are always in His presence: that He is a being of perfect reason: that, if it be reasonable, that the transgressors of reason should be punished, they will most certainly, one time or other, be punished, &c. And then, if they do this, it is easy to see what effect it must have upon all their thoughts, words, and actions.

By what is said here, no superstition is intended to be introduced: it is only the practice of reason and truth, which is required: and any thing, that is not inconsistent with them, may be freely done, though under the inspection of our great Lawgiver himself.

* Religio deorum cultu pio continetur. Cic. 
  Qui omnia, qua ad cultum deorum pertinent, diligenter retraerant, & tanquam relegarent, sunt divi religiosi, &c. Id. 
  b Particularly with respect to customary swearing; which, beside the ill consequences it has in making oaths cheap, &c.
  is a great instance of disregard and irreverence. For they, who use themselves to it do, at least, make the tremendous name of God to serve for an expulsive only; and commonly to rude, passionate, or debauched discourse (άγιος έναπλόραιημα πειςμοί το άγιον λατων α' θυσίαν. Ph. Jud.)

Sect.
Sect. VI. Truths respecting Mankind in general, antecedent to all human laws.

In this and the following sections I shall proceed as in the foregoing.

I. Every man hath in himself a principle of individuation, which distinguishes and separates him from all other men in such a manner, as may render him and them capable of distinct properties in things (or distinct subjects of property). That is, B and C are so distinguished, or exist so distinctly, that if there be any thing which B can call his, it will be for that reason not C’s: and v. v. what is C’s will for that reason not be B’s. The proof of this I put upon every man’s own conscience. Let us see then whether there is any thing, which one man may truly call his.

II. There are some things, to which (at least before the case is altered by voluntary subjection, compact, or the like) every individual man has, or may have, such a natural and immediate relation, that he only of all mankind can call them his.

The life, limbs, &c. of B are as much his, as B is himself. It is impossible for C, or any other to see with the eyes of B: therefore they are eyes only to B: and when they cease to be his eyes, they cease to be eyes at all. He then has the sole property in them, it being impossible in nature, that the eyes of B should ever be the eyes of C.

Further, the labor of B cannot be the labor of C: because it is the application of the organs and powers of B, not of C, to the effecting of something; and therefore the labor is as much B’s, as the limbs and faculties made use of are his.

Again, the effect or produce of the labor of B is not the effect of the labor of C: and therefore this effect or produce is B’s, not C’s; as much B’s, as the labor was B’s, and not C’s. Because, what the labor of B causes or produces, B produces

---

\[a\] ὁ δὲ ὁμοίως ὑμῖν ἂν ἡμῖν ἃντις, Ἡχ.  
\[b\] And therefore the produce of a man’s labor is often still called his labor. So, and 

---

R. 2
by his labor; or it is the product of B by his labor: that is, it is B’s product, not C’s, or any other’s. And if C should pretend to any property in that, which B only can truly call his, he would act contrary to truth.

Lastly, there may be many things, which B may truly call his in some such sense, or upon some such account, as no other can; and to which C has no more right than D, nor D than F, &c. the property of which will therefore be in B. Because C has no more title than D, nor D than F, &c. and that, to which every one besides B has an equal title, no one besides B can have any title to at all, their pretences mutually balancing and destroying each other, whilst his only remains. And in this case a small matter, being opposed to nothing, will be strong enough to maintain the claim of B.

III. Whatever is inconsistent with the general peace and welfare (or good) of mankind, is inconsistent with the laws of human nature, wrong, intolerable. Those maxims may be esteemed the natural and true laws of any particular society, which are most proper to procure the happiness of it. Because happiness is the end of society and laws: otherwise we might suppose unhappiness to be proposed as the right end of them; that is, unhappiness to be desirable, contrary to nature and truth. And what is said of a particular society is not less true, when applied to the universal society of mankind. Now those things are most apt to produce happiness, which make the most men happy. And therefore those maxims or principles, which promote the general tranquillity and well being of mankind, if those words express the happiness of mankind, must be the true laws of humanity, or the basis of them: and all such practices, as interfere with these, must also interfere with those. It is contradictory to say, that any thing can be a general law of human nature, which tends only to favor the pleasures of some particulars to the prejudice of the rest, who partake of the same common nature; and especially if these pleasures are of the lower and brutal kind. As a million of men are more than one; so in fixing the public laws of human nature, and what ought to be, or not to be, they must in reason be more regarded by a million of times: for here we consider men only as men.

It will be easy now to shew, that the transgression of these laws, concurring to the general good of the world, is wrong and morally evil. For if mankind may be said in general to be a rational animal, the general welfare of it must be the welfare of a rational nature: and therefore that, and the laws which advance it,

---

a If B works for another man, who pays him for his work, or labor, that alters not the case. He may commute them for money, because they are his.

b Tanquam Sparti illi poetarum, sic so. invicem jugulant, ut nemo ex omnibus refert, as Laelius says in another case.
Truths respecting Mankind, &c. 129

must be founded in reason; nor can be opposed by any thing, but what is opposite to reason, and consequently to truth.

Let us suppose some rule, by which if all mankind would agree to govern themselves, it would be in general good for the world: that is, such a practice would be agreeable to the nature and circumstances of mankind. If all men should transgress this rule, what would be the consequence of such an universal revolt? A general evil, or something disagreeable to our nature and the truth of our circumstances: for of contrary practices there must be contrary effects; and contraries cannot both be agreeable to the same thing. This then would be wrong by the terms. And as wrong it would be in any one man: because all the individuals have equal right to do it, one as much as another; and therefore all as much as any one. At least it is certain, that whoever should violate that rule, would contribute his share towards the introduction of universal disorder and misery; and would for his part deny human circumstances to be what they are, public happiness to be what it is, and the rule to be what it really is, as much as if all others confined with him in this iniquity and madness.

With what face can any particular man put his own humor or unreasonable pleasure into the scale against such a weight of happiness as that of all the world? Does not he, who thus centers in himself, disregards the good of every body else, and entirely separates his injoynments and interests from those of the public; does not he, I say, strike himself out of the roll of mankind? Ought he to be owned as one of them? Ought he not rather to be repelled, and treated as an alien and enemy to the common happiness and tranquillity of our species?

IV. Whatever is either reasonable or unreasonable in B with respect to C, would be just the same in C with respect to B, if the case was inverted. Because reason is universal, and respects cases, not persons. (See sect. III. pr. II.)

Cor. Hence it follows, that a good way to know what is right or wrong in relation to other men, is to consider what we should take things to be were we in their circumstances.

V. In a state of nature men are equal in respect of dominion. I except for the present the case of parents and their children, and perhaps of some few other near relati-
The Religion of Nature. Sect. VI.

ons. Here let me be understood to mean only those, between whom there is no family relation (or between whom all family relation is vanished).

In a state, where no laws of society make any subordination or distinction, men can only be considered as men, or only as individuals of the same species, and equally sharing in one common definition. And since by virtue of this same definition B is the same to C, that C is to B; B has no more dominion over C than C reciprocally has over B: that is, they are in this regard equal.

Personal excellencies or defects can make no difference here: because, 1. Who must judge, on which side the advantage lies? To say B (or D, or any body else) has a right to judge to the disadvantage of C, is to suppose what is in question, a dominion over him; not to prove it. 2. Great natural or acquired endowments may be privileges to them who have them: but this does not deprive those, who have less, of their title to what they have; or, which is the same, give any one, who has greater abilities, a right to take it, or the use of it from them. If B has better eyes than C, it is well for him: but it does not follow from this, that C should not therefore see for himself, and use his eyes, as freely as B may his. C's eyes are accommodated by nature to his use, and so are B's to his; and each has the sole property in his own: so their respective properties are equal. The case would be parallel to this, if B should happen to have better intellectual faculties than C. And further, if B should be stronger than C, he would not yet for that reason have any right to be his lord. For C's less degree of strength is as much his, as B's greater is his: therefore C has as much right to his, and (which is the natural confluence) to use his, as B has to use his: that is, C has as much right to resist, as B has to impose or command, by virtue of his strength: and where the right (tho not the power) of resisting is equal to the right of commanding, the right of commanding or dominion is nothing. 3. Since strength and power are most apt to pretend a title to dominion, it may be added further, that power and right, or a power of doing anything, and right to do it, are quite different ideas: and therefore they may be separated, nor does one infer the other. Lastly, if power, qua power, gives a right to dominion, it gives a right to every thing, that is obnoxious to it; and then nothing can be done that is wrong. (For no body can do anything which he has not the power to do.) But this is not only contrary to what has been proved in sect. I. but to assert it would be to advance a plain absurdity or contradiction.

* Nihil est unum uni tam simile, tam par, quam omnes inter omnes ipsos summus.—Quaecumque est hominis definitio, una in omnibus valet. Cic.

b When the Romans, in Livy, asked the Gauls, Quodnam id jus esset, agrum a possessoribus petere, aut minari arma; they answered, se in armis jus ferre, & omnia fortium virorum esse. Like barbarians indeed!
rather. For then to oppose the man who has this power, as far as one can, or (which is the same) as far as one has the power to do it, would not be wrong: and yet so it must be, if he has a right to dominion, or to be not opposed. Moreover, that a man should have a right to anything, merely because he has the power to take it, is a doctrine indeed, which may serve a few tyrants, or some banditti and rogues, but directly opposite to the peace and general good of mankind; and therefore to be exploded, by prop. III. It is also what the powerful themselves could not allow, if they would but imagine themselves to be in the state of the weak and more defenceless; and therefore unreasonable, by prop. IV.

VI. No man can have a right to begin to interrupt the happiness of another. Because, in the first place, this supposes a dominion over him, and the most absolute too that can be. In the next, for B to begin to disturb the peace and happiness of C is what B would think unreasonable, if he was in C's case. In the last, since it is supposed, that C has never invaded the happiness of B, nor taken any thing from him, nor at all meddled with him, but the whole transaction begins originally from B (for all this is couched in the word begin), C can have nothing that is B's; and therefore nothing, to which C has not at least as good a title as B has; or, in other words, nothing, which C has not as much right to keep as B to claim. These two rights being then at least equal, and counterpoising each other, no alteration in the present state of things can follow from any superiority of right in B: and therefore it must of right remain as it is; and what C has must, for any right that B has to oppose this settlement, remain with C in his undisturbed possession. But the argument is still stronger on the side of C: because he seems to have such a property in his own happiness, as is mentiond in prop. II. such as no other can have.

VII. The no man can have a right to begin to interrupt another man's happiness, or to hurt him; yet every man has a right to defend himself and his against violence, to recover what is taken by force from him, and even to make reprisals, by all the means that truth and prudence permit. We have seen already, that there are some things, which

---

1. *Josephus*, when he says, ἑαυτοῦ γε μὴ ὑμῖν ὅμοι, ἐπεὶ δὴν ἐπηκέφαλος, ἐπεὶ δὴν ἀναπόθανε, ἠμισοῦσι διαφωτίου, can only mean, that necessity, or perhaps prudence, obliges to do this; not any law in the stricter sense of that word.


3. All this is supposed to be in a state of nature and the absence of human laws.
a man may truly call his; and let us for the present only suppose, that there may
be more. This premised, I proceed to make good the proposition.

To deny a man the privilege mentioned in it is to assert, contrary to truth, either
that he has not the faculties and powers, which he has; or that the Author of na-
ture has given them to him in vain. For to what end has he them, if he may not
use them? And how may he use them, if not for his own preservation, when he is
attacked, and like to be abused, or perhaps destroyed.

All animals have a principle of self-preservation, which exerts itself many times
with an uncontroulable impetuosity. Nature is uniform in this, and every where
constant to itself. Even inanimate bodies, when they are acted upon, react. And
one may be sure, that no position can have any foundation in nature, or be con-
sistent with it and truth (those inseparable companions), which turns upon nature
itself, and tends to its destruction.

Great part of the general happiness of mankind depends upon those means, by
which the innocent may be saved from their cruel invaders: among which the oppor-
tunities they have of defending themselves may be reckoned the chief. Therefore
to debar men of the use of these opportunities, and the right of defending
themselves against injurious treatment and violence must be inconsistent with the
laws of nature, by prop. III.

If a man has no right to defend himself and what is his, he can have no right to
any thing (the contrary to which has been already in part, and will by and by be
more amply proved); since that cannot be his right, which he may not maintain
to be his right.

If a man has no right to defend himself against insults, &c. it must be because the
aggressor has a right to affail the other, and usurp what is his: but this pretension
has been prevented in the foregoing proposition. And, more than that, it includes
a great absurdity, to commence an injury, or to begin the violence, being in nature
more than only to repell it. He, who begins, is the true cause of all that follows:
and whatever falls upon him from the opposition made by the defending party, is
but the effect of his own act: or, it is that violence, of which he is the author, re-
lected back upon himself. It is as when a man spits at heaven, and the spittle falls
back upon his own face.

Since he, who begins to violate the happiness of another, does what is wrong,
he, who endeavours to obviate or put a stop to that violence, does in that respect
what is right, by the terms.

Lastly, since every man is obliged to consult his own happiness, there can be no
doubt but that he not only may, but even ought to defend it (sect. II. prop. IX.)
in such a manner I mean, as does not interfere with truth, or his own design of being happy. He ought indeed not to act rashly, or do more than the end proposed requires: that is, he ought by a prudent carriage and wise forecast to shut up, if he can, the avenues by which he may be invaded; and when that cannot be done, to use arguments and persuasives, or perhaps withdraw out of the way of harm: but when these measures are ineffectual or impracticable, he must take such other as he can, and confront force with force. Otherwise he will fail in his duty to himself, and deny happiness to be happiness.

By the same means, that a man may defend what is his, he may certainly endeavour to recover what has been by any kind of violence or villainy taken from him. For it has been shewn already, that the power to take any thing from another gives no right to it. The right then to that, which has been taken from its owner against his will, remains still where it was: he may still truly call it his; and if it be his, he may use it as his: which if he who took it away, or any other, shall hinder him from doing, that man is even here the aggressor, and the owner does but defend himself and what is his. Besides, he, who uses any thing as his, when it is his, acts on the side of truth: but that man, who opposes him in this, and consequently afferts a right to that, which is not his, acts contrary to truth. The former therefore does what cannot be amis: but what the latter does, is wrong by that fundamental proposition, sect. I. prop. IV.

Then further, if a man hath still a right to what is forceably or without his consent taken from him, he must have a right to the value of it. For the thing is to him what it is in value to him: and the right he has to it, may be considerd as a right to a thing of such a value. So that if the very thing which was taken be destroyd, or cannot be retrieved, the proprietor nevertheless retains his right to a thing of such a value to him; and something must be had in lieu of it: that is, he has a right to make reprifals. Since every thing is to every man what it is in value to him, things of the same value to any one may be reckond as to him the same, and to recover the equivalent the same as to recover the thing itself: for otherwise it is not an equivalent. If the thing taken by way of reprifal should be to the man, from whom it is taken, of greater value than what he wrongfully took from the recoverer, he must charge himself with that loss. If injustice be done him, it is done by himself, the other has no more than what he has a right to. To which add, that as a man has a right to recover what is his, or the equivalent, from an invader; so he seems for the same reasons to have a right to an equivalent for the expense he is at in recovering his own, for the loss of time and quiet, and for the trouble, hazards, and dangers under-
gone: because all these are the effects of the invasion, and therefore to be added to the invader's account.

VIII. The first possession of a thing gives the possessor a greater right to it, than any other man has, or can have, till be and all, that claim under him, are extinct. For, 1. till then no other man can be the first possessor again: which is more than nothing; since he comes into it by God's providence, and as it were donation. 2. That, which no man has yet any title to, the finder may take without the violation of any truth. He doth not deny that to another man's, which is another man's: he doth not begin to interrupt the happiness of any body, &c. Therefore to possess himself of it is not wrong. So far from it, that since every man is obliged to consult his own happiness (that is, his own interest and advantages, whenever he can do it without the violation of truth) not to act consonantly to this obligation is an omission that would be wrong. What he does therefore is right. And then if he does right in taking possession of it, he must from thence be the rightful possessor; or, it becomes his. 3. There are many things, which cannot be possessed without cultivation and the contrivance and labor of the first possessor. This has generally been the case of lands: and these are indeed more eminently meant by the word possessions. Now to deprive a man of the fruit of his own cares and sweat, and to enter upon it, as if it was the effect of the intruder's pains and travel, is a most manifest violation of truth. It is ascertaining in fact that to be his, which cannot be his. See prop. II. 4. The contrary doctrine, viz. that prime occupancy gives no right, interferes with prop. III. for it must certainly be inconsistent with the peace and happiness of mankind in general to be left in endless wars and struggles for that, which no man can ever have any right to. And yet thus it must be, if that doctrine was true: because it has been demonstrated, that power confers no right; and therefore the first right to many things can only accrue from the first possession of them. 5. If B should endeavour by force (or fraud) to eject C out of the possession of any thing, which C enjoys, and obtain without expelling or disturbing any body, he would certainly do that, which he himself would judge unreasonable, were he in C's place. Therefore he acts, as if that was not reason with respect to C, which would be reason in respect of B; contrary to the nature of reason, and to prop. IV. 6. To endeavour to turn a man violently out of his possession is the same as to command him to leave them, upon pain of suffering for non-obedience. But this is usurping a dominion, which he has no right to; and is contrary to prop. V. 7. No man can expel another out of his

3 Nam propria telluris herum natura nec illum, Nee me, nec quenquam statuit. Hor.
Truths respecting Mankind, &c. 135

possession without beginning to interrupt his happiness: nor can any one do this without contravening the truth contained in prop. VI. This therefore secures the possession in his possession for ever: that is, it confirms his right to the thing possessed. Lastly, the first possessor, of whom I have been speaking, has undoubtedly a right to defend his person, and such other things as can only be bis, against the attempts of any aggressor (see prop. II.): therefore these no one can have a right to violate. And therefore again, if he cannot be forcibly dispossessed without violence offered to these, no one has any right to dispossess him. But this must be the case, where the possessor does not quit his possession willingly. The right consequently must remain solely in him, unless he consents to quit it.

N. The successors of an invader, got into possession wrongfully, may acquire a right in time; by the failure of such, as might claim under him who had the right. For he, who happens to be in possession, when all these are extinct, is in the place of a prime occupant.

IX. A title to many things may be transferred by compact or donation. If B has the sole right in lands, or goods, no body has any right to the disposal of them besides B: and he has a right. For disposing of them is but using them as his. Therefore the act of B in exchanging them for some thing else, or bestowing them upon C, interferes not with truth: and so B does nothing that is wrong. Nor does C do any thing against truth, or that is wrong, in taking them: because he treats them as being what they are; as things, which come to him by the act of that person, in whom is lodged the sole power of disposing of them. Thus C gets the title innocently.

But in the case of compact the reason, on which this transaction stands, is more evident still. For the contractors are supposed to receive each from other the equivalent of that which they part with, or at least what is equivalent to them respectively, or perhaps by each party preferable. Thus neither of them is hurt: perhaps both advantaged. And so each of them treats the thing, which he receives upon the innocent exchange, as being what it is: better for him, and promoting his convenience and happiness. Indeed he, who receives the value of any thing, and what he likes as well, in effect has it still. His property is not diminished: the situation and matter of it is only altered.

a Τις δένσεως, και τις εἴδως καὶ τις κανέως, εἰς ἰσογίνεται πολὺς ἁρμών, κυρίως καὶ παρόμοιας ἐπιμέλεις ὧν αὐτοί ἀρμοῖνε. ibid.

b To this may be reduced that title to things, which Tully mentions as conferred by some law (lege); and even thence, which accrue conditione, or forte. For I suppose the government to have a right of giving them thus.
The Religion of Nature. Sect. VI.

Mankind could not well subsist without bartering one thing for another; therefore whatever tends to take away the benefit of this intercourse, is inconsistent with the general good of mankind, &c. If a man could find the necessaries of life without it, and by himself, he must at least want many of the comforts of it.

X. There is then such a thing as property, founded in nature and truth: or, there are things which one man only can, consistently with nature and truth, call his: by prop. II, VIII, IX.

XI. Those things, which only one man can truly and properly call his, must remain bis, till be agrees to part with them (if they are a b, as he may part with) by compact or donation; or (which must be understood) till they fail, or death extinguishes him and his title together, and he delivers the lamp to his next man. Because no one can deprive him of them without his approbation, but the depriver must use them as bis, when they are not bis, in contradiction to truth. For,

XII. To have the property of any thing and to have the sole right of using and disposing of it are the same thing: they are equipollent expressions. For when it is said, that P has the property, or that such a thing is proper to P, it is not said, that P and Q or P and others have the property (proprium limits the thing to P only): and when any thing is said to be his, it is not said that part of it only is his. P has therefore the all or all-hood of it, and consequently all the use of it. And then, since the all of it to him, or all that P can have of it, is but the use and disposal of it, he who has this has the thing itself, and it is his.

Laws

---

* Which must not give way to opinions of fines, &c. The master was in the right, who corrected Cyrus for adjudging the great coat to the great boy, and the little one to the little. He was not τὸ ἐγγύτερον βρέφος, but of property. Omnium, quae in hominum doclorum disputatia verantur, nihil est prodeo praetulibilis. quan planē intelligi nos ad justiam esse natos, neque opiniones, sed naturæ constitutum esse juss. Cic.  

b There is another way of acquiring a title mentioned: which is, by the right of war, as it is called. Sum privata nulla naturâ: sed aut veteri occupatione, ut qui quondam in uicem venerunt: aut victoria, ut qui bellò potius sumus, &c. Cic. And so in Xenophon it is said to be an eternal law among men, that if a city be taken in war, the bodies and goods of the people in it are the conqueror's; and they may possess them as their own, not διοικεῖν. But sure this wants limitations.  

c Allodium.  

---

* ηδοικες ἀναγνωρίαν λέγωσα ο θέω μοι ἐχέω τιν διοικειν τε ἁγιον, ή τίς οἰκίας, τίνι ἐχεις ἀλλ' ἐκ. Πάντες ηδοικες ἐχομεν διοικειαι διατιμας δι' ὑδέων.--- ἐκατερ, ἐκατερ οὐ ἐν τῇ τελευτῇ παρακόσμου ἕτερῳ, τὴν ἐξήν ἔμελλονες μόνον. S. Chryf. Tατών μοι φοιτη εἰς ἐκάκοι κύριοι, νομοὶ δι'
Laws indeed have introduced a way of speaking, by which the property and the usufruct are distinguished; but in truth the usufructuary has a temporary, or limited property; and the proprietary has a perpetual usufruct, either at present, or in reversion. Propriety without the use (if the use is never to come to the proprietary) is an empty sound.

I have before upon some occasions taken it as granted, that he, who uses any thing as his, when it is not his, acts against truth, &c. but now I say further, that,

XIII. He, who uses or disposes of any thing, does by that declare it to be his. Because this is all, that he, whose it really is, can do. Borrowing and hiring afford no objection to this. When the borrower or hirer uses the thing borrowed or hired, he uses what is his own for the time allowed: and his doing so is only one of those ways, in which the true proprietary disposes of it.

XIV. To usurp or invade the property of another man is injustice: or, more fully, to take, detain, use, destroy, hurt, or meddle with any thing that is his without his allowance, either by force or fraud or any other way, or even to attempt any of these, or affix them, who do, are acts of injustice. The contrary; to render and permit quietly to every one what is his, is justice. Def.

XV. He that would not violate truth, must avoid all injustice: or, all injustice is wrong and evil. It interferes with the truths here before laid down, and perhaps more. It denies men to be subject capable of distinct properties: in some cases it denies them to have a property even in their own bodies, life, fame, and the like: the practice of it is incompatible with the peace and happiness of mankind: it is what every man thinks unreasonable in his own case, when the injury is done to himself: to take any thing from another only because I think I want it, or because I have power to take it, and will have it, without any title.
to it, is the highest pretence to dominion, and denial of our natural equality: it is setting up a right to begin to disturb the happiness of others: and lastly, it is to deny there is any such thing as property, contrary to truth.

Briefly, if there be any thing which P can truly and properly call his, then, if T takes or uses it without the consent of P, he declares it to be his (for if it was his he could do no more) when it is not his, and so acts a lie*: in which consists the idea and formal ratio of moral evil.

The very attempting any instance of injustice, or assisting others in such an attempt, since it is attempting and promoting what is wrong, is being in the wrong as much as one is able to be; or doing what one can to achieve that which is evil: and to do this, by the terms, must be wrong and evil.

Even the desire of obtaining any thing unjustly is evil: because to desire to do evil, by the terms again, is an evil or criminal desire. If the act follows such a desire, it is the child and product of it: and the desire, if any thing renders the fulfilling of it impracticable, is the act obstructed in the beginning, and stifled in the womb.

Let it be observed here by way of scholion concerning the thing called covetousness, that there seem to be three sorts of it. One is this here mentioned: a desire of getting from others, tho' it be unjustly. This is wrong and wicked. Another is an immense desire of heaping up what one can by just methods, but without any reasonable end proposed*, and only in order to keep, and as it were bury itd: and the more he accumulates, the more he cravese. This also intrenches upon truth, and seems to be a vice. But to covet to obtain what is another man's by just means, and with his consent, when it may contribute to the happiness of our selves or families, and perhaps of the other person too, has nothing surely that looks unfriendly upon truth, or is blameable, in it. This, if it may be called covetousness, is a virtuous covetousness.

---

* Account to σοι μοι τον Ιησου, τον σε αματτησε, ἀπει εἰς τον σε αματτησε. Epic.'s words. Justitia primus mutus est, ut ne cui quis nocens, nis lacessitius injuria; deinde, ut communibus pro communibus muter, privatis ut suis. Cic. This is to use things as being what they are. b Blepsias o δα- νιστας, in Lucian, dies of hunger (λιθη ληθετο ληγετο ἀπορειας). Ridiculous enough. c Or only πες το αχιερα, as Anarcharhis said of some Greeks. Athen. d As that man, in Athen., indeavourd literally to do; of whom it is reported, that, being much in love with his money, before he died he swallowed as much of it as he could (καταπινοντα εκ χληγες χρηματος ζωντανοι). e Of such it is, that Diogenes used to say, Ὦμοις των μαθητησ τοις ειδοποιησις, τωι Stob. The Mamfihilim, mentioned in Nahh. Ab. compare them لثمآ شيشها مَحِمَّتٍ هَلَلَوِيَّةٍ كَيْ كَيْ لَيَلَوْيَا شَشَرَحةٌ نَيْمٌ عَلَى نَئَمِ. XVI. When
XVI. _When a man cares not what sufferings he causes to others, and especially if he delights in other men’s sufferings and makes them his sport, this is what I call cruelty. And not to be affected with the sufferings of other people, tho they proceed not from us, but from others, or from causes in which we are not concerned, is unmercifulness. Mercy and humanity are the reverse of these._

XVII. _He, who religiously regards truth and nature, will not only be not unjust, but (more) not unmerciful, and much less cruel. Not to be affected with the afflictions of others, so far as we know them, and in proportion to the several degrees and circumstances of them, tho we are not the causes of them, is the same as to consider the afflicted as persons not in affliction; that is, as being not what they are, or (which is the same) as being what they are not: and this contradicts matter of fact._

One can scarce know the sufferings of another without having at least some image of them in his mind: nor can one have these images without being conscious of them, and as it were feeling them. Next to suffering itself is to carry the representation of it about with one. So that he, who is not affected with the calamities of others, so far as they fall within his knowledge, may be said to know and not to know; or at least to cancel his knowledge, and contradict his own conscience.

There is something in human nature resultling from our very make and constitution, while it retains its genuine form, and is not altered by vicious habits; not perverted by transports of revenge or fury, by ambition, company, or false philosophy; nor oppressed by stupidity and neglecting to observe what happens to others: I say, there is something, which renders us obnoxious to the pains of others, causes us to sympathize with them, and almost comprehends us in their cafe. It is grievous to see or hear (and almost to hear of) any man, or even any animal whatever, in torment. This compassion appears eminently in them, who upon other accounts are justly reckoned the best of men: in some degree it appears in almost all; nay,

---

* Properly called _humanity_; because nothing of it appears in brutes.  
* When Seneca says, _Clementiam—omnes boni praebent, misericordiam autem vitabunt_, he seems only to quibble. He has many other weak things upon this subject. That, _succurrit [sapiens] alienis lachrymis, non accedet_, owns one use of tears: they obtain succour even from a Stoic.  
* ἀργαίοι ἀριστέραις ἄνδροι. They, who of all writers undertake to imitate nature most, oft introduce even their heroes weeping. (See how Homer represents Ulysses Od. 151,—2,—7,—8.) The tears of men are in truth very different from the cries and ejaculations of children. They are _silent streams_, and flow from other causes; commonly some tender, or perhaps philosophical, reflection. It is easy to see how hard hearts and dry eyes come to be fashionable. But for all that, it is certain the _glandula lacrymales_ are not made for nothing.
even sometimes, when they more coolly attend to things, in those hardend and execrable monsters of cruelty themselves, who seem just to retain only the least tincture of humanity that can be. The Pherean tyrant, who had never wept over any of those murders he had caused among his own citizens, wept when he saw a tragedy but acted in the theatre: the reason was, his attention was caught here, and he more observed the sufferings of Hecuba and Andromache, than ever he had those of the Phereans; and more impartially, being no otherwise concerned in them but as a common spectator. Upon this occasion the principle of compassion, implanted in human nature, appeared, overcame his habits of cruelty, broke through his petrification, and would shew that it could not be totally eradicated. It is therefore according to nature to be affected with the sufferings of other people; and the contrary is inhuman and unnatural.

Such are the circumstances of mankind, that we cannot (or but very few of us, God knows) make our way through this world without encountering dangers and suffering many evils: and therefore since it is for the good of such, as are so exposed or actually smarting under pain or trouble, to receive comfort and assistance from others, without which they must commonly continue to be miserable, or perish, it is for the common good and welfare of the majority at least of mankind, that they should compassionately and help each other. To do the contrary must therefore be contrary to nature and wrong by prop. III. And beside, it is by one's behaviour and actions to affirm, that the circumstances of men in this world are not what they are; or that peace, and health, and happiness, and the like, are not what they are.

Let a man substitute himself into the room of some poor creature dejected with invincible poverty, distracted with difficulties, or groaning under the pangs of some disease, or the anguish of some hurt or wound, and without help abandon to want and pain. In this distress what reflections can he imagine he should have, if he found that every body neglected him, no body so much as pitying him, or vouchsafing to take notice of his calamitous and sad condition? It is certain, that what it would be reasonable or unreasonable for others to do in respect of him, he must allow to be reasonable or unreasonable for him to do in respect of them; or deny a manifest truth in prop. IV.

If unmercifulness, as before defined, be wrong, no time need to be spent in proving that cruelty is so. For all that is culpable in unmercifulness is contained in cruelty, with additions and aggravations. Cruelty not only denies due regard to the suffer-

---

\* Plut.
\* A generous nature pities even an enemy in distress. Πόιοις ἐπαντός ἡ μη Δίκαιος, ἡμῖν, καίτις ἐν τα δικαιοὶ, Soph.
ings of others, but causes them; or perhaps delights in them, and (which is the most insolent and cruel of all cruelties) makes them a jest and subject of raillery. If the one be a defect of humanity, the other is diametrically opposite to it. If the one does no good, the other does much evil. And no man, how cruel soever in reality he was, has ever liked to be reckoned a cruel man: such a confession of guilt does nature extort; so universally doth it reject, condemn, abhor this character.

XVIII. The practice of justice and mercy is just as right, as injustice, unmercifulness, and cruelty are wrong. This follows from the nature of contraries. Beside, not to be just to a man is to be not just, or unjust to him: and so not to be merciful is to be unmerciful, or perhaps cruel.

Here I might end this section: but perhaps it may not be improper to be a little more particular. Therefore,

XIX. From the foregoing propositions may be deduced the heinousness of all such crimes, as murder, or even hurting the person of another any how, when our own necessary defence does not require it (it being not possible, that any thing should be more his, than his own person, life and limbs); robbing, stealing, cheating, betraying; defamation, detraction; defiling the bed of another man, et cæter. with all the approaches and tendencies to them. For these are not only comprised within the definition of injustice, and are therefore violations of those truths, which are violated by that; but commonly, and some of them always, come within the description of cruelty too. All which is evident at first sight with respect to murder, robbery, cheating, plagiarizing, &c. especially if a man brings himself into the case, and views himself in his own imagination as renderd scandalous by calumniators and liars; stript by thieves; ruined in his fortunes and undone by knaves; struggling to no purpose, convulsed and agonizing under the knife of some turbulent ruffian; or the like.

The same is altogether as plain in the case of adultery b, when any one e infnakes, and corrupts the wife of another; notwithstanding the protection it gains from false notions, great examples d, and the commonness of the crime e. For (the nature of matrimony being for the present supposed to be such, as it will appear by and by to be) the adulterer denies the property a husband has in his wife by compact, the most express and sacred that can possibly be made: he does that, which

---

a Est hominum nata, quam sequi debemus, maximè inimica crudelitas. Cic.  
b Διπλον μὴν ἐκκλησίας, ἀλλ' ἐκ ἑαυτῶν ὡς ἐν μιᾷ. Chrys.  
c One of the Subsequens alienorum matrimoniorum, as they are called in Val. Max.  
d Palam apparet, adhuc atque Divi Hierosymii adulterium capitale solum panure: nunc magnatum lascivit est. Schol. in S. Hier.  
e For hence follows impunity, &c. Miflin.
tends to subvert the peace of families, confounds relation, and is altogether inconsistent with the order and tranquillity of the world, and therefore flies from the souls of families, and then thinks that they are incapable of suffering painful and destructive passions. The poor woman herself, tho' she may be deluded, and not see at present her guilt, or the consequences of it, usually pays dear for her security and want of guard, the husband becoming cold, and averse to her, and the full of apprehensions and fears, with a particular dread of his further resentment. And their affairs, in this disjointed and distracted condition, are neglected; innocent children lighted, and left unprovided for, without so much as the comfort of any certain relations to pity them.

The adulterer may not be permitted to extenuate his crime by such impertinent simile's and rakish talk, as are commonly used for that purpose. When any one wrongs another of his property, he wrongs him of what it is to him, the proprietor: and the value must be set according to what he esteems it to be, not what

---

1 Is, qui nullus non uxorem concupisit, — idem uxorem suam aspicere non vult: & fidei acerrimus excitet, est perjudice: & mendacia persequitur, ipsa perjurium. Sen. b ἡμᾶς, τὸν ἰωάκημον. c What a monster in nature must he be, who, as if it were meritorious to dare to act against all these, (to use Seneca's words again) "satis justam semiam ruit amandi, quod aliena est [uxor]? d Ouid ἃ τῆς ἑξῆς ἀστία, ὡς τὸ σώμα μόνον διάβησθαι τῆς μαχαιρίων γυναικὸς, ἄιι ἵππος τάξεις ἀστία, ἡ ποικιλοί πρὸς τὸ νόμως. e Seneca's words again, "ex oblatione, & praebente, parta tunc metus ope sedecus & suis furtum & ἁμαρτείν, καλ. Ph. Jud. f Marriage is usque ad usque & bius,—αἰκητικὸς ἐμίς ἴμις τὴν κατὰ [καννιῶν]. Ἰσορ. g Ἀπαλὲν ἔδωκεν Μ. Βασ. h Ἐπιταχ, εἰμι διὰ, says the penitent woman in Soph. ap. Plat. i Ποταμὸς παραγγαλών — Ἡ τοιοῦ τοῦ ἑυμ. Soph. j Quid enim salvēs multēs, amissā pudicitia? Livy. k Οἱ μοῖροι νόμον κόσμῳ ὅλους πᾶν ὅρα ἐπέκειν προσαρμομένου ἐναμώνου, μοτὶ τῶν τῶν γυμνῶν, μοτὶ τῶν τῶν μοίρων. Ph. J.

---

Such as Aristippus uses to Diogenes, ap. Athen. 'Αριστίππης ἐφέσω Διογένεσι, παντί τί ποτὲ ἐκεί ἐκείνων ἐκείμην ἐκείνα, ἔν ἐκέρατος ἐνγεννηθεῖς, ἐν, τὸ ἐν τὴν ᾅνει, ἐν τῇ ἀρνίᾳ, καὶ πολλαὶ πεπιλυκμεναί; ἢ τῶν τῶν ἑρεθές διὰ τῶν τῶν πολεμικῶν — —. Senecan stuff. Nor is that of the adulterous woman in Prov. S. better: where a man placed with the way of an eagle in the air, of a serpent upon a rock, of a fish in the sea, maketh evil of the words of his lips, and therefore she has no better: See Qabar venagi.
the injurer, who perhaps has no taste of virtuous pleasures, may think it to be.
(See p. 33. ob. 34.) Nor may these thefts be excused from their secrecy. For
1. the injustice of the fact is the same in itself, whether known, or not. In either
case truth is denied: and a lie is as much a lie, when it is whispered, as when it is
proclaimed at the market-cross. 2. It has been shewn (fct. II.) that the restitute of
our actions and way to happiness are coincident; and that such acts, as are disa-
greeable to truth, and wrong in themselves, tend to make men ultimately unhappy.
Things are so order'd and disposed by the Author of nature, or such a constitution
of things flows from him, that it must be so. And since no retreat can be impervious
to his eye, no corner so much out of the way, as not to be within his plan,
no doubt there is to every wrong and vicious act a suitable degree of unhappiness
and punishment annexed, which the criminal will be sure to meet with some time or
other. For his own sake therefore he ought not to depend upon the darkness of
the deed. But lastly, it can hardly be, but that it must be discovered. People
generally rise in vice, grow impudent and vain and careless, and discover themselves:
the opportunities contrived for it must be liable to observation: some confidents
must be trusted, who may betray the secret, and upon any little disfavour probably
will do it: and besides, love is quick of apprehension.

It will be easily perceived from what has been said, that if to murder, rob,
&c. are unjust and crimes of a heinous nature, all those things which have any
tendency toward them, or affinity with them, or any way countenance them, must
be in their degree criminal: because they are of the same complexion with that
which they tend to, the not of the same growth, nor matured into the gross act,
or perhaps do not operate so presently, apparently, or certainly. Envoy, malice,
and the like, are conatus's toward the destruction or ruin of the person, who is
the object of these unhappy passions. To throw dust upon a man's reputation
by innuendo's, ironies, &c. may not indeed fully it all at once, as when dirt is
thrown, or gross calumnies; yet it infects the air, and may destroy it by a lin-
grain poison. To expose another by the strength of a jesting talent, or
harder temper of face, is to wound him, though it be in an invisible

---

c Καὶ ὃ ἐν παραφθηκότι κρύφης, ύψεις ὀφθήσεται. Juv. Μακρυμναίοι— ἢ κλίνει ὁ λύκος ὁ Μεγαλόπο-
f Ἀγάδων ὅ τι μὴ ἀδελφόν, ἀδελφὸς τὸ μὴ ἀδελφόν. A gnome of Democrats. g אֲבָד. place a.
place. Many freedoms and reputed civilities of Barbarian extract, and especially gallantries, that proceed not to consummate wickedness; nor perhaps are intended to be carried so far, may yet divert peoples affections from their proper object, and debauch the mind. By stories or insinuations to sow the seeds of discord and quarrels between men is to murder, or hurt them, by another hand. Even for men to intermeddle in other peoples affairs, as busy bodies and δισαριστονε κοινονικα do, is to assume a province, which is not theirs; to concern themselves with things, in which they are not concerned; to make that public, which in itself is private; and perhaps to rob the person, into whose business they intrude themselves, of his quiet, if of nothing else. For indeed this intermeddling looks like setting up a pretence to something further; like an unjust attack begun at a distance. All which declares what an enemy, and how irreconcilable to truth, this pragmatical humor is. And so on.

If these things are so, how guilty must they be, who are designedly the promoters or instruments of injustice and wickedness; such as mercenary swearers, and false witnesses; traders in scandal; solicitors in vice; they who intend by their conversation to relax mens principles too much, and (as it seems) prepare them for knavery, lewdness, or any flagitious enterprize.

There are other crimes, such as infidelity to friends or them who intrust us with any thing, ingratitude, all kinds of willful perjury, and the like, which might have been mentioned in the proposition, being great instances of injustice: but because they are visibly such, and their nature cannot be mistaken, I comprise them in the et cet. there. Any one may see, that he, who acts unfaithfully, acts against his promises and ingagements, and therefore denies and sins against truth; does what it can never be for the good of the world should become an universal practice; does what he would not have done to himself; and wrongs the man, who depends upon him, of what he justly might expect. So the ungrateful man treats his benefactor as not being what he is; &c. And the false-swearer respects neither things, nor himself, nor the persons affected, nor mankind in general, nor God himself as being what they are. All this is obvious.

---

a. Many freedoms and reputed civilities of Barbarian extract, and especially gallantries, that proceed not to consummate wickedness; nor perhaps are intended to be carried so far, may yet divert peoples affections from their proper object, and debauch the mind. By stories or insinuations to sow the seeds of discord and quarrels between men is to murder, or hurt them, by another hand. Even for men to intermeddle in other peoples affairs, as busy bodies and δισαριστονε κοινονικα do, is to assume a province, which is not theirs; to concern themselves with things, in which they are not concerned; to make that public, which in itself is private; and perhaps to rob the person, into whose business they intrude themselves, of his quiet, if of nothing else. For indeed this intermeddling looks like setting up a pretence to something further; like an unjust attack begun at a distance. All which declares what an enemy, and how irreconcilable to truth, this pragmatical humor is. And so on.

If these things are so, how guilty must they be, who are designedly the promoters or instruments of injustice and wickedness; such as mercenary swearers, and false witnesses; traders in scandal; solicitors in vice; they who intend by their conversation to relax mens principles too much, and (as it seems) prepare them for knavery, lewdness, or any flagitious enterprize.

There are other crimes, such as infidelity to friends or them who intrust us with any thing, ingratitude, all kinds of willful perjury, and the like, which might have been mentioned in the proposition, being great instances of injustice: but because they are visibly such, and their nature cannot be mistaken, I comprise them in the et cet. there. Any one may see, that he, who acts unfaithfully, acts against his promises and ingagements, and therefore denies and sins against truth; does what it can never be for the good of the world should become an universal practice; does what he would not have done to himself; and wrongs the man, who depends upon him, of what he justly might expect. So the ungrateful man treats his benefactor as not being what he is, &c. And the false-swearer respects neither things, nor himself, nor the persons affected, nor mankind in general, nor God himself as being what they are. All this is obvious.

---

Main. et sim. pass. For, according to the Jewish doctors, he who does this breaks the sixth commandment. Abarb. See how chaste the Romans were once. Quo matronale decus verecundia munimento tantius est, in jus vocantis matronam corpus ejus stringere non pereferunt, ut inviolata manus aliena tactu solm relinqueretur. Val. M. And it is told of P. Manlius, that triste exemplo praecepit [filic suse], ut non solius virginitatem illibatam, sed eunium exculta ad virum sincera perferret. Id. Quanto autem praebitor est animus cor- pore, tanto fceletratus corrempitur. S. Auct. "Oportet igitur ei legem esse et in eum sese et in iussus eumque fuisse Romani, "Omnes enim immemorem beneficier omerunt. Cic. And the same may be said of the unfaithful, perjured, &c.

2. Sект.
Sect. VII. Truths respecting particular Societies of Men, or Governments.

I. M A N is a social creature: that is, a single man, or family, cannot subsist, or not well, alone out of all society. More things are necessary to sustain life, or at least to make it in any degree pleasant and desirable, than it is possible for any man to make and provide for himself merely by his own labor and ingenuity. Meat, and drink, and clothing, and house, and that frugal furniture which is absolutely requisite, with a little necessary physic, suppose many arts and trades, many heads, and many hands. If he could make a shift in time of health to live as a wild man under the protection of trees and rocks, feeding upon such fruits, herbs, roots, and other things, as the earth should afford, and happen to present to him; yet what could he do in sickness, or old age, when he would not be able to stir out, or receive her beneficence.

If he should take from the other sex such a help, as the common appetite might prompt him to seek, or he might happen to meet with in his walks; yet still if the hands are doubled, the wants are doubled too: nay more, additional wants, and great ones, attending the bearing and education of children.

If we could suppose all these difficulties surmounted, and a family grown up, and doing what a single family is capable of doing by itself; supporting themselves by gardening, a little agriculture, or a few cattle, which they have somehow got, and tamed (the even this would be hard for them to do, having no markets, where they might exchange the produce of their husbandry, or of their little flock, or herd for other things; no shops to repair to for tools; no servant, or laborer to assist; nor any public invention, of which they might serve themselves in the preparation of their grain, dressing their meat, manufacturing their wool, and the like); yet still it is only the cortex of the man, which is provided for: what must become of the interior part, the minds of these people? How would those be fed, and improved? Arts and sciences, so much of them as is necessary to teach men the use of their faculties, and unfold their reason, are not the growth of single families so implored. And yet for men to lay out

* Quid ergo, anima nullane habet alimento propria? an ejus efa scientia nobis videtur? S. Auct.
all their pains and time in procuring only what is proper to keep the blood and humors in circulation, without any further views, or any regard to the nobler part of themselves, is utterly incongruous to the idea of a being formed for rational exercises.

If all the exceptions against this separate way of living could be removed; yet as mankind increases, the little plots, which the several families possess, and cultivate, must be enlarged, or multiplied: by degrees they would find themselves straitend: and there would soon be a collision of interests, from whence disputes and quarrels would ensue. Other things too might minister matter for these. And beside all this, some men are naturally troublesome, vitious, thievish, pugnacious, rabid; and these would always be disturbing and flying upon the next to them: as others are ambitious, or covetous, and, if they happen to have any advantage or superiority in power, would not fail to make themselves yet greater or stronger by eating up their neighbours, till by repeated incroachments they might grow to be formidable.

Under so many wants, and such apprehensions, or present dangers, necessity would bring some families into terms of friendship with others for mutual comfort and defence: and this, as the reason of it increased, would become stronger, introduce stricter engagements, and at last bring the people to mix and unite. And then the weak being glad to shelter themselves under the protection and conduct of the more able, and so naturally giving way for these to ascend, the several forts would at length settle into their places, according to their several weights and capacities with respect to the common concern. And thus some form of a society must arise: men cannot subsist otherwise.

But if it was possible for a man to preserve life by himself, or with his petit company about him: yet no body can deny, that it would be infinitely better for him, and them, to live in a society, where men are serviceable to themselves and their neighbours at the same time, by exchanging their money, or goods, for such other things as they want more; where they are capable of doing good offices each for other in time of need; where they have the protection of laws, and a public security against cheats, robbers, assailants, and all enemies to property; where a common force or army is ready to interpose between them and foreign invaders; and where they may enjoy those discoveries which have been made in arts and learning, may improve their faculties by conversation and innocent conflicts of reason, and (to speak out) may be made men.

* Alter in aliteris exitium levi compendio ducitur. Sen.
**Truths respecting particular Societies, &c. 147**

If, when we have the **privilege** of society and laws, we can scarce preserve our own, or be safe, what a woful condition should we be in **without them**; exposed to the insults, rapines, and violence of unjust and merciless men, not having any **sanctuary**, any thing to take refuge in? So again, if notwithstanding the help of friends and those about us, and such conveniences as may be had in cities and peopled places, we are forced to bear many pains and melancholy hours, how **irksome** would life be, if in sickness or other trouble there was no body to administer either **remedy** or **consolation**?

Lastly, society is what men generally **desire**. And tho much company may be attended with much vanity, and occasion many evils; yet, it is certain, that absolute and perpetual **solitude** has something in it very irksome and hideous. Thus the social life is natural to man; or, what his nature and circumstances require.

II. **The end of society is the common welfare and good of the people associated.** This is but the consequence of what has been just said. For because men cannot subsist well, or not so well, separately, therefore they unite into greater bodies: that is, the end of their uniting is their better subsistence; and by how much their manner of living becomes better, by so much the more effectually is this end answered.

III. **A society, into which men enter for this end, supposes some rules or laws, according to which they agree all to be governed, with a power of altering or adding to them as occasion shall require.** A number of men met together without any rules, by which they submit to be governed, can be nothing but an irregular multitude. Every one being still sui juris, and left entirely to his own private choice, by whatever kind of judgment or passion or caprice that happens to be determined, they must needs interfere one with another; nor can such a concourse of people be any thing different from an indigested chaos of different parts, which by their confused motions would damnify, and destroy each other. This must be true, if men **differ** in the size of their understandings, in their manner of thinking, and the several turns their minds take from their education, way of living, and other circumstances; if the greatest part of them are under the direction of bodily affections; and if these differ as much as their shapes, their complexions, their constitutions do. Here then we find nothing but confusion and unhappiness.

---

*a* Aristotle says a good man would be neither **μηδὲν**, nor **πολυφαίλός**. This is just. **Therefore Seneca** seems to go a little too far, when he writes, *Omnes amicos habere operosum esse, fatis esse inimicos non habere.*

*b* Ζωὴν σωκεγχεισκὴν ὁ ἄθρωπος, *S. Bas.*

*c* Man is, in *Greg. Naz.*'s words, *τὰ πελετησάταισα τι ἔσον, καὶ ποικιλάταισα.*

Such
Such a combination of men therefore, as may produce their common good and happiness, must be such a one as in the first place, may render them compatible one with another: which cannot be without rules, that may direct and adjust their several motions and carriages towards each other, bring them to some degree of uniformity, or at least restrain such excursions and enormities, as would render their living together inconsistent.

Then, there must be some express declarations and scita to ascertain properties and titles to things by common consent: that so, when any altercations or disputes shall happen concerning them (as be sure many must in a world so unreasonable and prone to iniquity), the appeal may be made to their own settlements; and by the application of a general undisputed rule to the particular case before them it may appear, on which side the obliquity lies, the controversy may be fairly decided, and all mouths eternally stopp'd. And then again, that they may be protected and persevere in this agreeable life, and the enjoyment of their respective properties be secured to them, several things must be forecasted by way of precaution against foreign invasions; punishments must be appointed for offences committed amongst themselves, which being known may deter men from committing them, &c. These rules, methods, and appointments of punishments, being intelligibly and honestly drawn up, agreed to, and published, are the mutual compacts under which the society is confederated, and the laws of it.

If then to have the members of a society capable of subsisting together, if to have their respective properties ascertained, if to be safe and quiet in the possession of them be for the general good of the society, and these things cannot be had without laws; then a society, whose foundation and cement is the public good, must have such laws, or be supposed at least to design such.

As to the making of any further laws, when the public interest and welfare require them, that is but repeating the same power in other instances, which they made use of before in making their first laws: and as to altering or repealing, it is certain the power of making and unmaking here are equal. Beside, when men are incorporated and live together for their mutual good, this end is to be consider'd at one time as much as at another; not only in their first constitution and settlement.

IV. These laws and determinations must be such, as are not inconsistent with natural justice. For 1. To ordain any thing that interferes with truth is the same as to ordain, that what is true shall be false; or v. v. which is absurd. 2. To pretend by a law to make that to be just, which before and in itself was unjust, is the same as to ordain that which interferes with truth: because justice is founded in

1. ἵνα ἐπίστημον πάντως συνθέτων κατὰ Demosth. 2. Νόμοι εἰς τὰ ἑαυτὸν ἐγνώκειν. Stob. ξε ρ. Plar. truth
truth (as before), and everywhere the same. Therefore, 3. by a law to enact any thing which is naturally unjust is to enact that which is absurd; that which by fact. 1. is morally evil; and that which is opposite to those laws, by which it is manifestly the will of our Creator we should be governed. And to enact what is thus evil must be evil indeed. Lastly, to establish injustice must be utterly inconsistent with the general good and happiness of any society; unless to be unjustly treated, pillared, and abused can be happiness. And if so, it is utterly inconsistent with the end of society; or, it is to deny that to be the end of it, which is the end of it.

V. A society limited by laws supposes magistrates, and a subordination of powers: that is, it supposes a government of some form or other. Because, where men are to act by rules or laws for the public weal, some must of necessity be appointed to judge, when those laws are transgressed, and how far, to decide doubtful causes, and the like: there must be some armed with authority to execute those judgments, and to punish offenders: there must be persons chosen not only to punish and prevent public evils, but also to do many other things, which will be required in advancement of the public good: and then the power of making new laws, and abrogating or mending old ones, as experience may direct or the case at any time require, as also of providing presently and legally for the safety of the public in time of sudden danger, must be lodged somewhere.

If there are no executors of the laws, the laws cannot be executed: and if so, they are but a dead letter, and equal to none: and if the society has none, it is indeed no society, or not such a one as is the subject of this proposition. Guardians and executors of laws are therefore the vitals of a society, without which there can be no circulation of justice in it, no care of it taken, nor can it continue. And since men can be but in one place at once, there must be numbers of these proportionable to the bigness and extent of it.

---

a Δικαίως φύσιν, ἀληθινῶς, καὶ τοιαύτα τινών ἢ μη διὰρμόν ὅπερ τὸ τῶν καὶ ἀδέλει καὶ ὁ Πλήρως καίναι. Arist. b Even the Heathens believed, that above all human καθόρηκτα there were ἀναπληρά καθάληθα θεῶν νόμων, which mortals ought not to transgress: ut τινὰ τιν᾽ τιν᾽ καθένα ἀλλὰ ἀνεκ τοίν πολλ᾽ τῶν. Soph. Nec si regnante Tarquinio nulla erat Roma scripta lex de supris, idcirco non contra—legem sempiternam Sex. Tarquinius vim Lucretia—astulit. Erat enim ratio praefecta a rerum natura, & ad recte faciendum impellens, & ad delicto avocans: quae non tum denique incipit lex esse, ciam scripta est, sed tum cum orta est. Orta autem simul est cum mente divina. Cic. c Si tanta poetae sint futurorum sensentis atq; suis, ut eorum suffragiis rerum natura vertatur; cur ne fisciuncus, ut, qua mala perniciofis sunt, habeantur pro bonis, ac salutaribus? aut cur, cum jus ex injuria lex facere possit, bonum eadem facere non possit ex malo? Cic.
And further, since the concerns of a whole society, and such things as may fall within the compass of a statute book, are various, requiring several sorts and sizes of abilities, and lying one above another in nature; since not only private men want to be inspected, but even magistrates and officers themselves, who ( tho' they oft forget it) are still but men; and since the whole society is to be one, one compact body: I say, since the case is thus, there must be men to act in several elevations and qualities as well as places, of which the inferior sort in their several quarters must act immediately under their respective superiors; and so this class of superiors in their several provinces under others above them; till at last the ascent is terminated in some head, where the legislative power is deposited, and from whence spirits and motion are communicated through the whole body. An army may as well be supposed to be well disciplined, well provided, and well conducted without either general or officers, as a society without governors and their subalterns, or (which is the same) without some form of government, to answer the end of its being.

VI. A man may part with some of his natural rights, and put himself under the government of laws, and those, who in their several stations are intrusted with the execution of them, in order to gain the protection of them, and the privileges of a regular society. Because by this he doth but exchange one thing for another, which he reckons equivalent, or indeed preferable by much: and this he may do without acting against any truth. For the liberties and natural rights, which he exchanges, are his own, and therefore no other man's property is denied by this; nor is the nature of happiness denied to be what it is, since it is happiness which he aims at in doing this. On the contrary, he would rather offend against truth, and deny happiness to be what it is, if he did not do it; especially seeing, that here his own happiness coincides with the general happiness and more convenient being of the kingdom or commonwealth, where his lot falls, or his choice determines him to live.

If the question should be asked, what natural rights a man may part with, or how far he may part with them; the general answer, I think, may be this. Some things are essential to our being, and some it is not in our power to part with. As to the rest, he may depart from them so far as it is consistent with the end, for which he does this: not further, because beyond that lies a contradiction. A man cannot give away the natural right and property he has in any thing, in order to preserve or retain that property: but he may consent to contribute part of his estate, in order to preserve the rest, when otherwise it might all be lost; to take his share of danger in defence of his country, rather than certainly perish, be inflaved, or mind by the conquest or oppression of it; and the like.

VII. M.
Truths respecting particular Societies, &c. 151

VII. Men may become members of a society (i.e. do what is mentioned in the foregoing proposition) by giving their consent, either explicitly, or implicitly. That a man may subject himself to laws, we have seen. If he does this, he must do it either in his own person; or he must do it by some proxy, whom he substitutes in his room to agree to public laws; or his consent must be collected only from the conformity of his carriage, his adhering to the society, accepting the benefits of its constitution, and acquiescing in the established methods and what is done by virtue of them. By the two first ways he declares himself explicitly, and directly: nor can he after that behave himself as if he was no member of the society, without acting as if he had not done what he has done. And this is the case not only of them, who have been concerned in the first formation of any government, but also of them, who have in the said manners a given their consent to any subsequent acts, by which they own'd, confirmed, and came into what their ancestors had done, or who have by oaths put themselves under obligations to the public. By the last of the three ways mentioned a man's consent is given indeed implicitly, and less directly; but yet it is given, and he becomes a party. For suppose him to be born in some certain kingdom or commonwealth, but never to have been party to any law, never to have taken any oath to the government, nor ever formally to have engaged himself by any other act. In this case he cannot methinks but have some love and sympathy for that place, which afforded him the first air he drew; some gratitude towards that constitution, which protected his parents, while they educated and provided for him; some regard to those obligations, under which perhaps they have laid him, and with which limitations as it were they (or rather the Governor of the world by them) convey'd to him his very life.

If he inherits or takes anything by the laws of the place, to which he has no indefeasible right in nature, or which, if he had a natural right to it, he could not tell how to get, or keep, without the aid of laws and advantage of society; then, when he takes this inheritance, or whatever it is, with it he takes and owns the laws which give it him.

Indeed since the security he has from the laws of the country in respect of his person, and rights, whatever they either are, or may happen to be hereafter, is the general equivalent for his submission to them, he cannot accept that without being obliged in equity to pay this.

* In person, or by proxy.
Nay, lastly, his very continuing and settling in any place shews, that either he likes the constitution, or likes it better than any other, or at least thinks it better in his circumstances to conform to it than to seek any other: that is, he consents to be comprehended in it.

VIII. When a man is become a member of a society, if he would behave himself according to truth, he ought to do these things: viz. to consider property as founded not only in nature, but also in law; and men's titles to what they have, as strengthened by that, and even by his own concession and covenants; and therefore by so much the more inviolable and sacred: instead of taking such measures to do himself right, when he is molested, or injured, as his own prudence might suggest in a state of nature, to confine himself to such ways as are with his own consent marked out for him: and, in a word, to behave himself according to his subordination or place in the community, and to observe the laws of it. For it is contained in the idea of a law, that it is intended to be observed: and therefore he, who is a party to any laws, or professes himself member of a society formed upon laws, cannot willingly transgress those laws without denying laws to be what they are, or himself to be what he is supposed or professes himself to be: and indeed without contradicting all or most of those truths contained in the foregoing propositions.

IX. In respect of those things, which the laws of the place take no cognizance of, or when if they do take cognizance of them, the benefit of those laws cannot be had (for so it may sometimes happen. I say, in respect of such things), be who is a member of a society in other respects retains his natural liberty, is still as it were in a state of nature, and must endeavour to act according to truth and his best prudence. For in the former case there is nothing to limit him, by the supposition, but truth and nature. And in the other it is the same as if there was nothing; since in effect there is no law, where no effect or benefit from it is to be had. As, for example, if a man should be attacked by thieves or murderers, and has no opportunity or power to call the proper magistrate or officer to his assistance.

There is a third case, which perhaps may demand admission here: and that is, when laws are plainly contrary to truth and natural justice. For tho they may pass the usual forms, and be styled laws; yet, since no such law can abrogate that law of nature and reason, to which the Author of our being hath subjected us, or make falsehood to be truth; and two inconsistent laws cannot

---

* Plato says, when any man has seen our form of government, &c. and remains under it, ἦν ἕκ-μαν τῷ τῷ ἡματοθυμεῖν ἠγκαίνω.
Truths respecting particular Societies, &c. 153

both oblige, or subsist together; one of them must give way: and it is easy to discern, which ought to do it a.

There remains one truth more to be annexed here, which may be contradicted by the practices and pretences of Enthusiasts b.

X. The societies intended in this section, such as kingdoms and commonwealths, may defend themselves against other nations: or, war may lawfully be waged in defence and for the security of a society, its members and territories, or for reparation of injuries. For if one man may in a state of nature have a right to defend himself, (see sect. VI. prop. VII.), two may, or three, and so on. Nay, perhaps two may have a double right, three a threefold right, &c. At least, if the right be not greater, the concern is greater: and there will be more reason, that two, or three, or more should be saved, than one only; and therefore that two, or three, or more should defend themselves, than that one should. And if this may be done by men in a state of nature, it may be done by them when confederated among themselves: because with respect to other nations they are still in that state. I mean, so far as they have not limited themselves by leagues and alliances.

Beside, if a man may defend himself, he may defend himself by what methods he thinks most proper, provided he trespasses against no truth; and therefore, by getting the aid and assistance of others. Now when war is levied in defence of the public, and the people in general, the thing may be considerd as if every particular man was defending himself with the assistance of all the rest, and so be turned into the same case with that of a single man.

In truth the condition of a nation seems to be much the same with that of a single person when there is no law, or no benefit of law, to be had: and what one man may do to another in that position, may be done by one nation or politic body with respect to another: and perhaps by this rule, regard being had to what has been deliverd in sect. VI. the justice of foreign wars may be not untruly estimated.

Mutual defence is one of the great ends of society, if not the greatest, and in a particular and eminent manner involves in it defence against foreign enemies. And whoever signalizes himself, when there is occasion for his service, merits the grateful acknowledgements and celebrations of his country-men: so far at least as he acts generously and with a public spirit, and not in pursuance only of private views.

a Illud sine stimuluni, exsistimare omnia justa esse, quae sita sint in populum institutis, aut legibus.—Si populum justissimum principum decretis, si sententias judicis, juris constituenterunt, ius esse intercidendi: jus, adulterare: ius, testamentum falsa supponere, si hac sufragii aut scitis multitudinis probaretur. Cic.
b Maalicheans of old, and some moderns.
As to those wars, which are undertaken by men out of ambition, merely to inlarge empire, or to shew the world, how terrible they are, how many men they are able to slay, how many slaves to make, how many families to drive from their peaceful habitations, and, in short, how much mischief and misery they are able to bring upon mankind; these are founded upon false notions of glory: *imbellisbd* indeed by servile wits and misplaced eloquence, but condemned by all true philosophy and religion.

**Sect. VIII. Truths concerning Families and Relations.**

*This* section shall begin as relation itself does, with marriage.

I. *The end of marriage is the propagation of mankind, and joint happiness of the couple intermarrying, taken together; or the latter by itself.* The difference of the sexes, with the strong inclination they have each to the enjoyment of the other, is plainly ordained by the author of nature for the *continuance of the species*, which without that must be soon extinguished. And tho' people, when they marry, may have many times not so much the increase of their family in their design or wishes, as the *gratification* of an importunate appetite; yet since nature excites the appetite, and that tends to this end, *nature* (or rather its great Author) may be said to make this an end of the marriage, tho' the *bridegroom* and *bride* themselves do not.

---

*a* Like those particularly of *Cæsar*; of whom it is reported, that, *animadversa apud Herculis templum magnum Alexandri imaginem, ingemuit; quasi pertasus ignaviam suam, quod nihil dum à se memorabile actum effisset in saepe quâ jam Alexander orbem terrarum subegisset. Suet.*

*b* Some go to war *ostiis isti Æneas & memoriis Æneid. Plut.* Not out of necessity, and in order to peace; which is the true end of war. *Pacem æmos, ãe æmos æmos. Arist.* *In bellum susceptur, ut nihil aliquid quam pacem quaerant vindicat. Cic.*

*c* *Oi ἁθρατε νῦν τε τεκνοποιεῖ τέχνων ευτυχίαν, ἄκρεν & ἤ τις τῶν βίων, κλ. Arist.*

*d* *'Αδηνί κ’ γυναικεί φιλία δενι κατ’ φύσιν οπάνω. ἀρξάνως ο’ τι πέμπει συναισάρχων μάλλον ἡ πολιτική. Id.*

*e* *ν’ ἡ μεγάλης λίθω— πρὸς ἑαυτόν τε τιμίων ἑλετην ετώ το θυλωιό σώμα— το ε’ άρμων σώμα πρὸς τιν μείζον ἑλετη.*

*s. Bof.*

And
And then as to that other thing, which either accompanies the aforesaid end of marriage, or is (as in many cases it can only be) the end itself, the joint happiness of the conjuges, no body can be supposed to marry in order and on set purpose to make him or herself unhappy: no nor without a presumption of being more happy. For without an apprehension of some degree of happiness to accrue, or what presents itself to the imagination as such, and is taken for such, what can induce people to alter their condition? Something there must be, by which (however things prove upon trial) they think to better it. And indeed if their circumstances are such, as may enable them to maintain a family, and provide for children, without difficulties and an over-burden of cares, and if they in good earnest resolve to behave themselves as they ought, and reciprocally to be helpful and loving each to other, much comfort and happiness may justly be expected from this intimate union, the interchange of affections, and a conjunction of all their counsels and measures, the qualities and abilities of the one sex being fitted and as it were tallying to the wants of the other. For to pass over in silence those joys, which are truest when most conceal'd, many things there are, which may be useful, perhaps necessary to the man, and yet require the delicate hand and nimmer management and genius of the woman: and so, vicissis,
the woman cannot but want many things, which require the more robust and active powers or greater capacity of the man. Thus, in lower life, whilst the wheel, the needle, &c. employ her, the plough or some trade perhaps demands the muscles and hardiness of him: and, more generally, if he infpects domestic affairs, and takes care, that every thing be provided regularly, spent frugally, and injoyd with neatness and advantage, he is busied in that profession, or the oversight and improvement of that estate, which must sustain the charge of all this; he presides, and directs matters of greater moment; preserves order in the family by a gentle and prudent government, &c.

As then I founded the greater societies of men upon the mutual convenience, which attends their living regularly together; so may I found this less, but stricter alliance between the man and the woman in their joint-happiness. Nature has a further aim, the preservation of the kind.

II. That marriages are made by some solemn contract, vow, or oath (and these perhaps attended with some pledge, or nuptial rites), by which the parties mutually ingage to live

---

a Διαφαται περὶ γυνα, ἡ γυναικεία ἀνδρός, ὡς ἄνδρος, ιπατοθέν ὠς ἀνήλιος ὥς τὸ κοινὸς ιττότες τὰ Ζητέοντα. Arist.  
b See the conversation between Iphomenachus and his wife in Xenophon.  
c Plato (like most of the old Greeks and Romans) among many very fine things hath now and then some that are weak, and even absurd; yet I cannot think, that by his community of women he meant any thing like that, which is said, ap. Athen. to have been practised παρὰ Τειχίνων ἵπτετων τρώφευτων; or that his thought could be so gross, as Ladantius represents it: Scient ut ad eandem mulierem multis viri, tandem canes, confierrezent. For thus, property being taken out of the world, a great part of virtue is extinguished, and all industry and improvements are at an end. And besides that, many of the most substantial consorts and innocent delights of this life are destroyd at once. Si omnes omnium fuerint & mariti, & patres, & auxores, & liberi, qua ipsta conf巡e generis humani est? — Quis aut vir mulierem, aut mulier virum diligit, nisi habitauerint semper una? nisi deorsa mens, & servata invicem fides individuum fecrerit caritatem, &c. 1d. However it must be confess, that Plato has advanced more than was consistent with his own gravity, or with nature. The best excuse to be made for him, that I know of, is that in Athen. ἐκοι οἱ Πλάτων ρὸ τοῖς ὄνομα ἡδρία: γέλας ὡς οἰ ταῖς νηρεῖς, ἀλλὰ τοῖς ὀν αὐτὰ διασκέδασμαι: or perhaps to say, that he was so intent upon strengthening and defending his common-wealth, that he forgot, if men must live after his manner, there would be little in it worth defending. After all, his meaning to me is not perfectly clear.  
d Every one knows how marriages were made among the Romans, conformationes, compositiones, &c. of which ways the two former were attended with many ceremonies: and the legitima tabella or at least consent of friends (which could not be given without some solemnity) preceded all; auspicia were usually taken, public notaries and witnesses affilied, &c. Among the Greeks men and women were espoused by mutual promises of fidelity: besides which there were witnesses, and dotal writings (ταμικέα).
live together in love, and to be faithful, assisting, and the like, each to other, in all circumstances of health and fortune, till death parts them. I take for granted. For all nations have some form or other upon these occasions: and even private contracts cannot be made without some words in which they are contained, nor perhaps without some kind of significant, the private, ceremony between the lovers; which lose nothing of force with respect to them by their being both parties and witnesses themselves. Something must pass between them, that is declarative of their intentions, expresses their vows, and binds them each to the other. There is no coming together after the manner of man and wife upon any other foot.

III. That intimate union, by which the conjuges become possess each of the other's person, the mixture of their fortunes, and the joint-relation they have to their children, all strengthen the bonds and obligations of matrimony. By every act done in pursuance of a covenant, such as the matrimonial is, that covenant is owned, ratified, and as it were made de integro, and repeated.

Possession is certainly more than nothing. When this therefore is added to a former title, the title must needs be corroborated.

When two persons throw their all into one stock as joint-traders for life, neither of them can consistently with truth and honesty take his share out and be gone (i.e. dissolve the partnership) without the concurrence of the other; and sometimes it may not be easy, perhaps possible, to do it at all. Each therefore is even by this bound, and becomes obnoxious to the other.

And as to the present case, if the marriage to be not altogether unfruitful, since both the parents are immediately related to the same child, that child is the medium of a fixed, unalterable relation between them. For, being both of the same blood with

(προϊνγε); at the wedding, sacrifices to Diana and other deities, and the γαμήλιον τοξωλ; and after that, perhaps the being shut up together, eating the κυδόνος, a formal λύσις ζωής, &c. The κύριοι of the fews have been performed ἐκ θωτός ἐπικυρίας, or ἐπικύρησις, or μαρτυρία τῆς: the ceremonies accompanying which may be seen particularly in Shulh. ar. with the additions of R. Mo. Iserles (Eben ex.) And (to pass by other nations) the form of solemnization of matrimony, and the manner, in which persons married give their troth each to other among us, are extant in our public offices: where they may be seen by such, as seem to have forgot what they are.

a Communion stabili. Virg.

ברוח לחש אוחר רדך ררכה לאנה יוחא כל מכנס ברוכו בברו—לאה יוחא בר 호ו חרט כו.

In Refl. hokom.

c Αὐτή χρηματον κοινωνία προστά των γαμοδοτών, εἰς μίαν άνων πάντα κατακαταλείποις ἢ ἀνακαλείσαι, μὴ τό μόνον έδεικν, μὴ τό μόνον έπετέλεσθαι, ἀλλὰ πᾶν ἔκ φυσικής-Suns, μὴ μόνον ψυχής. Plut.

d Σούδανον το τίνω ἐκείνω ἑαυτῷ. Arist.
the child, they themselves come to be of the same blood: and so that relation which at first was only moral and legal, becomes natural; a relation in nature, which can never cease, or be disannulled. It follows now that,

IV. Marrying, when there is little or no prospect of true happiness from the match, and especially if there are plain presages of unhappiness; after marriage adultery; all kinds of infidelity; transferring that affection, which even under the decays of nature ought to preserve its vigor, and never to degenerate (at worst) but into a friendship of a superior kind, and the like, are all wrong. Because the first of these is belying ones own sense of things, and has an air of distraction; or however it is to act as if that was the least and most trifling of all transactions in life, which is certainly one of the greatest and most delicate. And to offend in any of the other ways is to behave, as if the end of marriage was not what it is; as if no such league had been made between the persons married, as has been made, actually, and solemnly, and is still subsisting between them; as if they were not possess each of the other; their fortunes not interwoven; nor their children so equally related to them, as they are; and therefore the misbehaviour, being repugnant to truth, is a sin against it, and the mighty Patron of it.

If the most express and solemn contracts, upon which persons, when they marry, do so far depend, as in confidence of their being religiously observed to alter quite their condition, begin a new thread of life, and rise all their fortune and happiness: I say, if such sacred compacts as these are allowed to be broken, there is an end of all faith; the obligation of oaths (not more binding than marriage vows) ceases; no justice can be administered; and then what a direful influence must this have upon the affairs of mankind upon that, and other accounts?
Truths concerning Families, &c. 159

Allowance, by sect. IV. ought to be made for inabilities, and involuntary fail- 
ings. A person’s age, health, estate, or other circumstances may be such, and without any fault, that he or she cannot do what they would; or perhaps instead of that one of them may come to want the pity and assistance of the other. In this case (which requires the philosophy and submission proper in afflictions) it is the duty of the one not only to bear with, but also to comfort, and do what may be done for the other. This is part of the happiness proposed, which consists not only in positive pleasures, but also in lessening pains and wants; whilst the pair have each in the other a refuge at hand.

N. I have designedly forborne to mention that authority of a husband over his wife, which is usually given to him, not only by private writers, but even by laws; because I think it has been carried much too high. I would have them live so far upon the level, as (according to my constant lesson) to be governed both by reason a. If the man’s reason be stronger, or his knowledge and experience greater (as it is commonly supposed to be), the woman will be obliged upon that score to pay a deference, and submit to him b.

Having now considered the man and woman between themselves, I proceed in the order of nature to consider them as parents; and to see (in a few propositions following) how things will be carried between them and their children, as also between other relations, coming at first from the same bed, if truth and matters of fact (to be named, where the argument shall call for them) are not denied.

V. Parents ought to educate their children, take the best care of them they can, endeavour to provide for them, and be always ready to assist them. Because otherwise they do not carry themselves towards their children as being what they are, children and theirs: they do not do what they would desire to have done to themselves, were they again to pass through that feeble and tender state; or perhaps what has been done to them c: and beside, they transgress the law established by nature for the preservation of the race, which, as things are, could not without a parental care and affection be continued; a law, which is in force among all the other tribes of animals, so far as there is occasion for it.


X 2

Not
Not to do what is here required, is not barely to act against truth and nature, not only such an omission as is mentioned in Sect. I. pr. V but a heinous instance of cruelty. If any one can deny this, let him better consider the case of an infant, neglected, helpless, and having nothing so much as to solicit for him, but his cries and (that which will do but little in this world) his innocence: let him think what it would be to turn a child, though grown up, out of doors, destitute of every thing, not knowing whither to fly, or what to do; and whether it is not the same thing, if he be left to be turned out by any body else hereafter, or (in general) to conflict with want and misery: let him reflect a while upon the circumstances of poor orphans left unprovided for, to be abused by every body, &c. and then let him say, whether it is possible for a parent to be so void of bowels, as not to be moved with these considerations; or what epithet he deserves, if he is not. If any of them who have been thus abandoned, and turned adrift, have done well; those instances ought to be placed among particular providences: as when a vessel at sea, without pilot or sailor, happens to be blown into the port.

Not only the care, but the early care of parents is required, lest death should prevent them; death, which skips none, and surprises many. Not to remember this, and act accordingly, is in practice to contradict one of the most certain and obvious of all truths.

VI. In order to the good of children, their education, &c. there must be some authority over them lodged by nature in the parents: I mean, the nature of the case is such, as necessarily requires there should be in the parents an authority over their children in order to their good. At first if some body did not nurse, feed, clothe, and take care of children, the interval between their first and last breath would be very short. They, on whom it is incumbent to do this, are undoubtedly their parents: to do this is their duty by the foregoing proposition. But then they must do it as they can, and according to their judgment: and this is plainly an act of authority, to order and dispose of another according to one's judgment, that it be done according to the best of one's judgment.

As the child grows up, the case is still the same in some degree or other, till he arrives at the age reckoned mature; and very often longer. He is become able perhaps to walk by himself, but what path to choose he knows not; cannot

---

\[a\] incertus quid fata ferant, ubi sitere detur, in the poet's language.  
\[b\] See that moving description of the Ἰμων ἐξεπετάλωθη in Homer.  
\[c\] I could never think of that Arabic saying without pity, The barber [ latino ] learns to shave upon the head of an orphan.  

distinguish
Truths concerning Families, &c. 161
distinguishing his safety and his danger, his advantages and disadvantages; nor, in
general, good and evil: he must be warned, and directed, and watched still by
his parents, or some body intrusted by them, or else it might have been possibly
much better for him to have expired under the midwife’s hands, and pre-
vented the effects of his own ignorance.

When he not only runs about, but begins to fancy himself capable of go-
 verning himself, by how much the more he thinks himself capable, by so much
the less capable may he be, and the more may he want to be governed. The
avenues of sense are open: but the judgment, and intellectual faculties are not
ripen but with time and much practice. The world is not easily known by per-
tons of adult abilities; and, when they become tolerably acquainted with it,
yet they find things in it so intricate, dubious, difficult, that it is many times
hard for them to resolve, what measures are fittest to be taken: but they, who
are not, or but lately, past their nuts, cannot be supposed to have any extent of
knowledge, or to be, if they are left to themselves, any thing else but a prey to
the villain who first seizes upon them. Instead of judgment and experience
we find commonly in youth such things as are remotest from them, childish ap-
petites, irregular passions, peevish and obstinate humors; which require to be
subdued, and taught to give way to wholesome counsels. Young people are not
only obnoxious to their own humors and follies, but also to those of their com-
panions. They are apt to hearken to them, and to imitate one another’s mis-
conduct: and thus folly mingles with folly, and increases prodigiously. The
judgment therefore of the parents must still interpose, and preside, and guide
through all these stages of infancy, childhood, and youth; according to their
power improving the minds of their children, breaking the strength of their in-
ordinate passions, cultivating rude nature, forming their manners, and shewing
them the way which they ought to be found in.

These things are so in full, and a parent cannot acquit himself of the duty im-
p osed upon him in the preceding proposition, if he acts so as to deny them: but
then he cannot act so as not to deny them (that is, so as to subdue the passions of
the child, break his stomach, and cause him to mind his instructions) without
some sort of discipline, and a proper severity; at least very rarely a.

To all this, and much more that might be urged, must be superadded,
that the fortunes of children, and their manner of settling out in the world

* For certainly, when it can be, Hoc patrium est, potius conservacere filium sua sponio rete facere,
quam alieno metu. Ter.
The Religion of Nature. Sect. VIII.

depending (commonly) upon their parents, their parents must upon this account be their directors, and govern their affairs.

N. 1. It appears now from the premises, that even parents have not properly a dominion over their children, such as is intended sect. VI. prop. V. from which this parental authority is a very different thing. This only respects the good of the children, and reaches not beyond the means, which the parents, acting according to the bent of their skill, abilities, and opportunities, find most conducive to that end: but dominion only respects the will of the lord, and is of the same extent with his pleasure. Parents may not, by virtue of this authority, command their children to do any thing which is in itself evil: and if they do, the children ought not to obey. Nor may they do any thing, what they please, to them. They may not kill, or maim, or expose them: and when they come to be men or women, and are possess of estates, which either their parents (or any body else) have given them, or they have acquired by their own labor, management, or frugality, they have the same properties in these with respect to their parents, which they have with respect to other people: the parents have no more right to take them by force from them, than the rest of the world have. So that what occurs in the place above-mentioned remains firm, notwithstanding any thing that may be objected from the case of parents and children. And moreover,

N. 2. They, who found monarchy in paternal authority, gain little advantage with respect to despotic or absolute power. A power to be exercised for the good of subjects (like that of parents of their children), and that principally, where they are incapable of helping themselves, can only be derived from hence. The father of his country cannot by this way of reasoning be demonstrated to be the absolute lord of the lives, and limbs, and fortunes of the people, to dispose of them as he pleases. The authority of parents goes not this length. Beside, if a parent hath an authority over his children, it doth not follow, that the eldest son should have the same authority, be it what it will, over his brothers.

a. Πρὶς ταύτα μὲν τινες ἀντιφάσεως γνωρίζεται, πρὶς δὲ κἀ'λλο τοῖς θείοις νόμοις καὶ πάθοσιν. Hieroc.
b. The barbarity of the thing at length put a stop to the custom of exposing children: but it had been practised by the Persians, Greeks, &c. Romulus's law only restrained it, but did not aboli it. For it injoined his citizens only, ἄτανυμα τίμιον ἐκεῖνον ἀπατεῖς, καὶ τινὰς ἀπειλήσως ἐκπληκτικά μὲν ἡ μορφή τῶν γυναῖκων μάτησεν τοῖς, πλὴν ὦ τοῦ γείστου παιδὸς ἀνάπτυξον, κ.λ. Dion. Halicarn. And besides, ἄκαθιν, ἦν, ἥταν ἐδωκὼν ἑξουσίαν ματρὶ καὶ ὑδε, καὶ παῖδα ἡμᾶς τῇ βίᾳ χρησίμως, κ.λ. ἱδ. c. Ἱερομάντων εἴσεσθαι ἦν ἔκ τῆς κόρης ζωγον ἔχει τα παιδία, ἕκκα καὶ τὰ χρημὰτα καὶ τὰ φάρματα τὰ παιδίων ὡς τοῦ τόκουν. ἠλπίτειν τοῖς πατρῴς ὑποδοθῆναι. ἱδ. d. These are instances of such laws, as should not be, by prop. IV. sect. VII. e. Romi patrem patriae Ciceronerem libera dixit. Juv. f. Οἱ λογικοὶ ὑμῶν ἐφήλαν, Arr.
and sisters: and much less, that the heir of the first parent should in succeeding generations have it over all the collaterals. The very relation between them soon vanishes, and comes at last in effect to nothing, and this notion with it.

VII. As parents are obliged to educate their children, &c. so children ought to consider parents as the immediate authors (authors under the first and great Cause) of their being; or to speak more properly, of their being born. I know children are apt (not very respectfully, or prudently) to say, that their parents did not beget them for their sakes, whom they could not know before they were born, but for their own pleasure. But they, who make this a pretext for their disobedience, or disregard, have not sufficiently thought, what pain, what trouble, how many frights and cares, what charges, and what self-denials parents undergo upon the score of their children: and that all these, if parents only rush'd into pleasure, and consulted nothing else, might easily be avoided, by neglecting them and their welfare. For as to those parents, who do this, let them speak for themselves: I shall not be their advocate.

VIII. A great submission and many grateful acknowledgements, much respect and piety are due from children to their parents. For if there is an authority in parents (as before) this must be answered by a proportionable submission on the other side: since an authority, to which no obedience is due, is equal to no authority.

If the thought of annihilation be generally disagreeable, as it seems to be, then merely to be conscious of existence must have in it something desirable. And if so, our parents must be considered as the authors, or at least the instruments of that good to us, whatever it is: which cannot be done, unless they are treated with distinction and great regard, being to us what no other is, or ever can be.

God, as the first cause of all beings, is often styled metaphorically, or in a large sense of the word, the Father of the world, or of us all: and, if we behave our selves towards Him as being such, we cannot (according to sect. V. pr. XIX. n. 3.) but adore Him. Something analogous, tho' in a low degree, to the case between God and his offspring there seems to be in the case between parents and their children. If that requires divine worship, this will demand a great respect and reverence.

*Utinam oculos in peitora possent inferere, et patrias intus dependerre curas.*

I confess, in Seneca's words, *minimum esse beneficium patris matrigne concubitum, nisi accerentia alia, quae prosequentur hoc initium muneris, & alii officii hoc rationem facerent.*

*To authofox oto ơv Eπ Io uδoι καθ' αυτον φοιλ  ציבור ους και Αριτ.* The sense of life (of being alive) seems to be something more than what Seneca calls *musaivum ac verum bonum.*

*Oi πελαιμαὶ ἐν θηριαῖς νόμοι, ἀλ.—καὶ τὴν πολλὴν τοὺς γονας ἅσθησαν, ὡς ἴδαν, ἄνδρας ἐγκακοὴς καλῶς. Simpl.*
Nor can I believe, that a child, who doth not honor his parent, can have any disposition to worship his Creator. The precept of honoring parents, to be found in almost all nations and religions, seems to proceed from some such sentiment: for in books we meet with it commonly following, or rather adhering to that of worshipping the Deity. In laying children under this obligation they have all confessed, tho' scarce in any thing else.

The admonitions of a parent must be of the greatest weight with his children, if they do but remember, that he hath lived longer, and had repeated occasions to consider things, and observe events; hath cooler passions; as he advances in years, and sees things more truly as they are; is able in a manner to predict what they themselves will desire to have done, when they shall arrive at his age; may upon these accounts, ordinarily, be presumed to be a more competent judge than themselves; and lastly from his relation to them must be more sincerely inclined to tell them truth, than any other person in the world can be supposed to be. I say, if young people reflect well upon these things, they cannot in prudence, or even kindness to themselves, but pay the utmost reverence to the advertisements and directions of a parent.

And to conclude, if parents want the affiance of their children, especially in the declension of their age, and when they verge towards a helpless condition again they cannot deny or withhold it, but they must at the same time deny to require the care and tenderness shewed by their parents towards them in their helpless and dangerous years; that is, without being ungrateful; and that is, without being unjust, if there be injustice in ingratitude. Nor (which is more still) can they do this with-
out denying what they may in their turn require of their children. In effect they do thus by their actions deny that to have been, which has been; and those things to be possible, which may be hereafter.

Not only bodily infirmities of parents, but such decays of their minds as may happen, ought to be pitied, their little hastinesses and mistakes dissembled, and their defects supplied, decently.

IX. That **πάθεια** or affection on both sides, which naturally and regularly is in parents towards their children, and vicissim, ought to be observed and followed, when there is no reason to the contrary.

We have seen before, and it is evident from the text, that sense ought to govern, when reason does not interpose; i.e. when there is no reason, why it should not. If then this **πάθεια** or mutual affection be an inward sense of the case between parents and children, which, without much thinking upon it, is felt by them, and suits upon their natures, it may be comprised in prop. XIV, and XV, of sect. III. But whether it is or not, the same may be said (which must be repeated in another place) of every affection, passion, inclination in general. For when there is no reason, why we should not comply with them, their own very solicitation, and the agreeableness we apprehend to be in complying, are preponderating arguments. This must be true, if something is more than nothing; or that ought to be granted, which there is no reason to deny. So that if this **πάθεια** be only taken as a kind of attraction, or tendence, in the mere matter of parents and children; yet still this physical motion or sympathy ought not to be over-ruled, if there be not a good reason for it. On the contrary, it ought to be taken as a suggestion of nature, which should always be regarded, when it is not superceded by something superior; that is, by reason. But further, here reason doth not only not gain say, by its silence content, and so barely leave its right of commanding to this bodily inclination; but it comes in strongly to abet and enforce it, as designed for a reasonable end: and therefore not to act according to it is not to act according to reason, and to deny that to be which is.

X. The same is true of that affection, which other relations naturally have, in some proportion or other, each for other. To this they ought to accommodate themselves

---

\textsuperscript{a} That epithet **pia** (pia Áëemst) shines in Virgil.

\textsuperscript{b} That is, methinks, a moving description in S. Basil (οἱ παιδεῖς) of a conflict which a poor man had within himself, when he had no other way left to preserve life but by selling one of his children.
where reason does not prohibit. The proof of this assertion is much the same with that of the foregoing mut. mutand.

The foundation of all natural relation is laid in marriage a. For the husband and wife having solemnly attach'd themselves each to other, having the same children, interests, &c. become so intimately related as to be reckon'd united, one fætus, and in the laws of nations many times one person b. Certainly they are such with respect to the posterity, who proceed from them jointly c. The children of this couple are related between themselves by the mediation of the parents. For every one of them being of the same blood with their common parents, they are all of the same blood (truly consanguinei), the relations, which they respectively bear to their parents, meeting there as in their center. This is the nearest relation that can be d, next to those of man and wife, parents and their children, who are immediately related by contact or rather continuity of blood, if one may speak so. The relation between the children of these children grows more remote and dilute, and in time wears out. For at every remove the natural tincture or sympathy may be supposed to be weaken'd; if for no other reason, yet for this. Every remove takes off half the common blood derived from the grand parents. For let C be the son of A and B, D the son of C, E of D, F of E: and let the relation of C to A and B be as 1: then the relation of D to A and B will be but 1/2; because C is but one of the parents of D, and so the relation of D to A and B is but the half of that, which C bears to them. By proceeding after the same manner it will be found, that the relation of E to A and B is 1/4 (or half of the half), of F 1/8: and so on. So that the relation, which descendents in a direct line have by blood to their grand parents, decreasing thus in geometrical proportion e, the relation between them of collateral lines, which paffes and is made out through the grand parents must soon be reduced to an inconsiderable matter f.

---

a Prima societas in ipso conjugio est: proxima in liberis, &c. Cic.
b Mulier conjuncta vire concebit in unum. Lucr. 166 The Religion of Nature. Sect. VIII.

---

Andr. Rhod.

---

If
If then we suppose this affection or sympathy, when it is permitted to act regularly and according to nature, no reason intervening to exalt or abate it, to operate with a strength nearly proportionable to the quantity or degree of relation, computed as above, we may perhaps nearly discern the degrees of that obligation, which persons related lie under, to assist each other, from this motive.

But there are many circumstances and incidents in life capable of affecting this obligation, and altering the degrees of it. A man must weigh the wants of himself and his own family against those of his relations: he must consider their sex, their age, their abilities and opportunities, how capable they are of good offices, how they will take them, what use they will make of them, and the like. He, who designs to act agreeably to truth, may find many such things demanding his regard; some justly moving him to compassion, others holding back his hand. But however this may in general be taken as evident, that next after our parents and own offspring nature directs us to be helpful, in the first place to brothers and sisters, and then to other relations according to their respective distances in the genealogy of the family, preferably to all foreigners. And tho our power, or opportunities of helping them in their wants should be but little; yet we ought to preserve our affection towards them, and a disposition to serve them, as far as we honestly and prudently can, and whenever the proper opportunity shall present itself. This nature and truth require.

Sect. IX. Truths belonging to a Private Man, and respecting (directly) only himself.

I. Every man knows (or may know) best, what his own faculties, and personal circumstances are, and consequently what powers he has of acting, and governing himself. Because he only of all mankind has the internal knowledge of himself, and what he is; and has the only opportunity by reflexion and experiments of himself to find, what his own abilities, passions, &c. truly are.

a Man and wife are supposed to be one, and therefore have no place here; any more than a man and his self. Otherwise considered distinctly, the one of them ought always to be the first care of the other.

b Ἐνδο κανονίσει τοιο πολιτεία τραγος. Hev.

c For many I acknowledge there are, who seem to be without reflexion, and almost thought. Τίς ἐγών τιν πολιτεία φύσιν; πολιτεία τάχα τούτος πάντες πιθον ὀδηγον. S. Chryf.

d Nec se quaquerit extra.

Y 2
168 The Religion of Nature. Sect. IX.

11. He, that well examines himself, I suppose, will find these things to be true.  

1. That there are some things common to him not only with sensitive animals and vegetable, but also with inanimate matter: as, that his body is subject to the general law of gravitation; that its parts are capable of being separated, or dislocated; and that therefore he is in danger from falls, and all impressions of violence.

2. That there are other things common to him with vegetables and sensitive animals: as, that he comes from a seed (such the original animalculum may be taken to be); grows, and is preserved by proper matter, taken in and distributed through a set of vessels; ripens, flourishes, withers, decays, dies; is subject to diseases, may be hurt, or killed; and therefore wants, as they do, nourishment, a proper habitation, protection from injuries, and the like.

3. That he has other properties common only to him and the sensitive tribe: as, that he perceives many affections of his body; finds pleasure from some, and pain from others; and has certain powers of moving himself, and acting: that is, he is not only obnoxious to hurts, diseases, and the causes of death, but also feels them; is not only capable of nourishment, and many other provisions made for him, but also enjoys them; and, besides, may contribute much himself to either his enjoyments, or his sufferings.

4. That besides these he has other faculties, which he doth not apprehend to be either in the inert mass of matter, or in vegetables, or even in the sensitive kind, at least in any considerable degree; by the help of which he investigates truth, or probability, and judges, whether things are agreeable to them, or not, after the manner set down in sect. III. or, in a word, that he is animal rationale.

5. That he is conscious of a liberty in himself to act or not to act; and that therefore he is such a being as is described sect. I. prop. I. a being, whose acts may be morally good or evil. Further,

6. That there are in him many inclinations and aversions; from whence flow such affections, as desire, hope, joy, hatred, fear, sorrow, pity, anger, &c. all which prompt him to act this or that way.

7. That he is sensible of great defects and limitations in the use of his rational faculties, and powers of action, upon many occasions: as also, that his passionss
Truths belonging to a Private Man, &c. 169

are many times apt to take wrong turns, to grow warm, irregular, excessive. In other words, that he is in many respects fallible, and infirm.

Lastly, that he desires to be happy: as every thing must, which understands what is meant by that word.

III. If he doth find these things to be so, then if he will act as he ought to do (that is, agreeably to truth and fact) he must do such things as these.

1. He must subject his sensual inclinations, his bodily passions, and the motions of all his members to reason; and try every thing by it. For in the climax set down he cannot but observe, that as the principle of vegetation is something above the inertia of mere matter, and sense something above that again; so reason must be something above all these: or, that his uppermost faculty is reason. And from hence it follows, that he is one of those beings mentioned sect III. prop. XI. and that the great law imposed upon him is to be governed by reason.

Any man may prove this to himself by experiment, if he pleases. Because he cannot (at least without great violence to his nature) do any thing, if he has a greater reason against the doing of it than for it. When men do err against reason, it is either because they do not (perhaps will not) advert, and use their reason, or not enough; or because their faculties are defective.

And further, by sect. III. prop. X. to endeavour to act according to right reason, and to endeavour to act according to truth are in effect the same thing. We cannot do the one, but we must do the other. We cannot act according to truth, or so as not to deny any truth, and that is we cannot act right, unless we endeavour to act according to right reason, and are led by it.

Therefore not to subject one's sensitive inclinations and passions to reason is to deny either that he is rational, or that reason is the supreme and ruling faculty in

a שמע ברעמה: יזרא יהודה.
b 'אלויכאנה שער ה-
דהל生產 והאמשגין. Chryl.

c The author of S. Bibard, reckons eight, the right use of which comprehends all practical religion: the heart, the eye, the mouth, nose, ear, hand, foot, and

đ. The duties respecting these are the subject of that (not bad) book.

d. Cium tect sunt hæc, effe, vivere, intelligere: & lapis est, & pecus vivet, nec sann lapide puto vivere, &p

pecus intelligere: qui autem intelligit, eum & effe & vivere certissimum est. Quare non dubito id excellentissimum judicare, cui omnia tecta infint, quam id cui duo vel unum defit. S. Ang. Thus reason gets man above the other visible orders of beings, &c.

e. Prae o e domini omnium & regina ratio—. Hac ut imperet illi parti animi, qua obedire debet, id videndum est vire. Cic,
his nature: and that is to desert mankind, and to deny himself to be what he knows himself by experience and in his own conscience upon examination to be, and what he would be very angry if any body should say he was not.

If a beast could be supposed to give up his sense and activity; neglect the calls of hunger, and those appetites by which he (according to his nature) is to be guided; and refusing to use the powers, with which he is indued in order to get his food and preserve his life, lie still in some place, and expect to grow, and be fed like a plant; this would be much the same case, only not so bad, as when a man cancels his reason, and as it were strives to metamorphize himself into a brute. And yet this he does, who pursues only sensual objects, and leaves himself to the impulses of appetite and passion. For as in that case the brute neglects the law of his nature, and affects that of the order below him: so doth the man disobey the law of his nature, and put himself under that of the lower animals; to whom he thus makes a defection.

If this be so, how wretchedly do they violate the order of nature, and transgress against truth, who not only reject the conduct of reason to follow sense and passion, but even make it subservient to them; who use it only in finding out means to effect their wicked ends, but never apply it to the consideration of those ends, or the nature of those means, whether they are just or unjust, right or wrong? Thus is not only to deviate from the path of nature, but to invert it, and to become something more than brutish; brutes with reason, which must be the most enormous and worst of all brutes. When the brute is governed by sense and bodily appetites, he observes his proper rule; when a man is governed after that manner in defiance of reason, he violates his; but when he makes his rational powers to serve the brutish part, to assist and promote it, he heightens and increases the brutality, enlarges its field, makes it to act with greater force and effect, and becomes a monster.

His duty then, who is conscious to himself of the truth of those things recounted under the foregoing proposition, is to examine every thing carefully, and to see

---

<i>This makes Cotta say, Satius fuit nullam omnino nobis a diis immortalibus datam esse rationem, quam tanta cum pereicie datam: with other bitter things. Tho an answer to this may be given in the words which follow afterward: A deo tantum rationem habemus, si modo habemus: bonam autem rationem, aut non bonam, à nobis.</i>
that he complies with no corporeal inclination at the expense of his reason; but that all his affections, concupiscible and irascible, be directed towards such objects, and in such measure, time, and place, as that allows. Every word and action, every motion and step in life should be conducted by reason. This is the foundation and indeed the sum of all virtue.

2. He must take care not to bring upon himself want, diseases, trouble; but, on the contrary, endeavour to prevent them, and to provide for his own comfortable subsistence, as far as he can without contradicting any truth (that is, without denying matters of fact, and such propositions, as have been already or will in the sequel here be shewn to be true, concerning God, property, the superiority of reason, &c.) To explain this limitation: if a man should consider himself as obnoxious to hunger, weather, injuries, diseases, and the rest; then, to supply his wants, take what is his neighbour's property; and at last, in vindication of himself, say, "I act according to what I am, a being obnoxious to hunger, &c. and to act otherwise would be incompliance with truth"; this would not be sufficient to justify him. The grand rule requires, that what he does, should interfere with no truth: but what he does interferes with several. For by taking that, which (by the supposition) is his neighbour's, he acts as if

This certainly excludes all that talk, which familiarizes vice, takes off those restraints which men have from nature or a modest education, and is so utterly destructive of virtue, that Aristotle banishes it out of the commonwealth. (Onesiphon ἡμρχελωνὶαν φθορὰς ἄναιμι καὶ τι, διὰ τανάρρητον, ἔστιν ἔργον περὶ τοῦ ποιεῖται, οὐκ ῥῆμα περὶ τοῦ συνεχόμενου.

b True, many reason: which is a very different thing from that superstitious preciseness, which carries things too far. As v. g. when the Jews not contented to condemn Goglios Kher or roia, and every where to express οὐκετί πέραν σαράνας, but far as to comprehend under it, as wide as to extend, and to add, 'to the last, to the end, to the utmost, etc.' There are other sayings of this kind to be seen, many of them, among those, which R. El. de Vidas has collected: as that particularly, οὗ τοι ὁ τρισχεῖς προτείνεται, τὰ ῥηματα, οὐδαμῶς. What Ælian reports of Anaxagoras and others, belongs to this place; that they never laughed: with many other unnecessary authorities, which might be added.

c Προσδιόρισμα τῶν [ἐν τοῖς ἐγκαθέναι] ἐν ἀνθρώπῳ ἀληθείας. Asri. They, who treated the body and things pertaining to it as merely ἀξιότερα, distinguishing between τὰ ψυχικὰ and τὰ ἁμαρτίαν, making these latter to be ἔνια πρὸς ἄνθρωπον, and leaving the body as it were to itself (ἀνθρώπων) μεγαλοπράτων, οὕτως πάντως: they, I say, might enjoy their own philosophy; but they would scarce gain many proselytes now a days, or ever persuade people, that the pains they feel are not theirs, or any thing to them. Nor indeed do I much credit many stories that are told of some old philosophers: as that of Anaxarchus, when he was put to a most cruel death by Nicocreon; οὗ ἔφεσα τὰς τιμωρίας, ἀπείρων—Πιστὸς ὁ Ἀνάξαρχος, Ἀνάξαρχος ἔστε ἐκθέτες. See Epic. Arr. Simpl. Anton. D. Laert. and others.
it was not his neighbour's, but his own, and therefore plainly contradicts fact, and those truths in sect. VI, VII. respecting property: when by not taking what is his neighbour's, he would contradict no truth, he would not deny himself to be obnoxious to hunger, &c. There are other ways of furnishing himself with conveniences, or at least necessaries, which are consistent with property and all truth: and he can only be said to deny himself to be what he is by omitting to provide against his wants, when he omits to provide against them by some of those ways; and then indeed he doth do it. (See p. 28. Anf. to Obj. 3.)

So again, when a man does any thing to avoid present suffering or dangers contrary to the express dictates of reason, and the tenor of forementiond truths, he acts as a sensitive being only, not as being what he really is, sensitivo-rationalis. But when there is no good argument against his doing of any thing, that may gain him protection from evil, or a better condition of life, he may then look upon himself only as a being, who needs that which is to be obtained by doing it: and in that case, if he should not do it, he would be false to himself, and deny the circumstances of his own nature.

Certainly when a man may without transgressing the limits prescribed consult his own safety, support, and reasonable satisfaction, and does not; and especially when he takes a counter-course, and exposes himself, he forgets many of the foregoing truths, and treats himself as not being what he is. This is true with respect to futurity, as well as the present time: and indeed by how much future time is more than the present, by so much the more perhaps ought that to be regarded. At least enjoyments ought to be taken and adjusted in such a manner, that no one should preclude, or spoil more, or greater to come.

It may easily be understood here, that those evils, which it is not in a man's power to prevent, he must endeavour to bear patiently and decently, i.e. as such; and moreover, such as are made by this means lighter: for when they cannot be totally prevented, as much of the effect must be prevented, or taken off, as can be. And in order to this it is good to be prepared for all attacks; especially the last, great one.

3. He must consider even bodily and sensual affections, passions, and inclinations as intimations, which many times be not only may, but ought to bearken to. What is said before the subjection of passions and appetites to reason must always be remembered. They are not to proceed from unjustifiable causes, or terminate in wrong objects;

* Ne offeramus nos periculis sine causa: quo nihil potest esse Stultius.—In tranquillo tempore stam adversam opusdemetet Cic.  
* Levius fit patientia, Quiquid corrigere est nefas. Hor.  
* Modus sanctus was a great man's definition of philosophy.
not be unseemly or immoderate. Being thus regulated, set to a true bias, and freed from all eruptions and violence, they become such as are here intended; gentle ferment working in our breasts, without which we should settle in inactivity; and what I think may be taken for just motives and good arguments to act upon.

For if a man finds, that he has not only a superior faculty of reason, but also an inferior appetitive faculty, under which are contained many propensions and aversions, these cannot be denied to be any more than that; tho' they must be taken indeed for what they really are, and not more. When they are checked by reason and truth, or there lies a reason against them (as there always will, when they are not within the foresaid restrictions), they must be taken as clogged with this circumstance, as things overruled and disabled: but when they are under no prohibition from the superior powers and truth, then they are to be considered as unfettered and free, and become governing principles. For (as it has been observed upon a particular occasion before p. 165.) when there is no reason against the complying with our senses, there is always one for it by prop. XIV. sect. III. the inclination itself, being precluded by nothing above it, is in this case uppermost, and in course takes the commanding point: and then a man must act as being what he is in n. 3. under prop. II. of this section.

The springs of all human actions are in fact, either a sense of duty, or a prospect of some pleasure or profit to be obtain'd, some evil or danger to be avoided; that is, either the reasonableness of what is done, or the manner, in which something doth or is like to affect the agent: and that is again, human actions are founded either in reason, or passion and inclination. (I need not add they may be in both.) This being so, what should hinder, when reason does not work, but that the inferior springs should retain their nature, and act.

Bodily inclinations and passions, when they observe their due subordination to reason, and only take place, where that leaves it open for them, or allows them to be as it were auxiliars to it upon the throne, are of admirable use in life, and tend many times to noble ends. This is applicable to the irascible, as well as the concupiscible affections and the whole animal system. Love of that which is amiable, compassion toward the miserable and helpless, a natural abhorrence and resentment.

a 'Εργα—αποτίθαι ἄµοιν διηγέσθαι. Chryf
b When the Stoics say, that a wise man may relieve one, who wants his help, without pitying him, I own indeed he may, but I very much doubt whether he would. If he had not some compassion, and in some measure felt the ills or wants of the other, I scarce know how he should come to take him for an object of his charity. c ὁ μὲν ἔρι
dις δὲ, καὶ δὲ δὲς δεινοί τινες, ἐν γὰρ ὑδάτω, ἐν πάση, καὶ ἐν ξυόν ἄρα, ἱππαγόμενοι, ἀρίστη. To be angry under these conditions is a different thing from rage, and those transports which perhaps scarce comply with any one of them: such as that of Alexander, who, because his Εἰρήνη died, commanded the Ασκληπιάδια to be all burnt. Arr.

Z
The Religion of Nature. Sect. IX.

of that which is villainous or vitious or base, fear of evils, are things, which duly temper have laudable effects: and without them mankind could not well subsist. By which it appears, that the Author of nature has placed these conatus's, these tendencies, and reluctancies in us, to dispose us for action, when there are no arguments of a higher nature to move us. So far are they, rightly managed, from being mere infirmities. And certainly the philosopher, who pretends to absolute apathy, mains nature, and sets up for a half-man, or I don't know what.

I must confess however, that our passions are so very apt to grow upon us, and become exorbitant, if they are not kept under an exact discipline, that by way of prevention or caution it is advisable rather to affect a degree of apathy, or to recede more from the worse extreme. This very proposition itself, which, when reason is absent, places sense and inclination in the chair, obliges not to permit the reins to our passions, or give them their full carreer; because if we do, they may (and will) carry us into such excesses, such dangers and mischiefs, as may badly affect the sensitive part of us: that part itself, which now governs. They ought to be watched, and well examined; if reason is on their side, or stands neuter, they are to be heard (this is all, that I say): in other cases we must be deaf to their applications, strongly guard against their emotions, and in due time prevent their rebellions against the sovereign faculty.

I cannot forbear to add, tho I fear I shall tire you with repetitions, that from what is said here and just before, not only the liberty men take in preferring what they like best, among present enjoyments, meats, drinks, &c. so far as they are innocent; but all those prudential and lawful methods, by which they endeavour to secure to themselves a comfortable and pleasant being, may be justified, and that obst. under prop. XIII. in sect. II. strengthen.

---

* There is, according to Tully, Civile odium, quomnes improbos adimit.

\[ \text{A wife man is not \( \alpha \tau \alpha \nu \), but \( \mu \mu \tau \mu \nu \tau \sigma \).} \]

---

4
If the gratification of an appetite be incompatible with reason and truth, to treat that appetite according to what it is, is to deny it: but if it is not, to use it as it is, is to consider it as an appetite clear of all objections, and this must be to comply with it. The humoring of such appetites, as lie not under the interdict of truth and reason, seems to be the very means, by which the Author of nature intended to sweeten the journey of life: and a man may upon the road as well muffle himself up against sun-shine and blue sky, and expose himself bare to rains and storms and cold, as debar himself of the innocent delights of his nature for affected melancholy, want, and pain. Yet,

4. He must use what means he can to cure his own defects, or at least to prevent the effects of them; learn to deny temptations, or keep them at a proper distance; even mortify, where mortification is necessary; and always carry about him the sense of his being but a man. He who doth not do this, doth not conform himself to the sev'enth particular under the preceding prop. (doth not own that to be true, which he is supposed to have found true in himself), denies a defect to be what it is, to be something which requires to be supplied, or amended; and is guilty of an omission, that will fall under sect. I. prop. V.

I might here mention some precautions, with some kinds and degrees of mortification or self-denial, which men will commonly find to be necessary. But I shall not prescribe; leaving them, who best know their own weak places and diseases, to select for themselves the proper remedies.

I shall only take notice, that since the self-denial here recommended can only respect things in themselves lawful and not unreasonable, and in favor of such our bare inclinations have been allow'd to be taken for arguments and directions, it looks as if this advice to deny ones self or inclinations inferred a contradiction. But this knot will be quickly untied. For when we deny our inclinations in order to better our natures, or prevent crimes, tho' to follow those inclinations might otherwise be right; yet in these circumstances and under this view there arises a good reason against it, and they, according to the established rule, must therefore give way: which is all that is intended c.

---

a Αγαθάκου μικρα, θ' εθνακαμεν πρεσβελιαν α εσχατον, ζναυακε ειτα παρασι τ φυσις. Max. Tyr.—
To appoint things, as the Jewish Doctors have done, to be.
כי לארתונא ארא סים לחרודיאר, or יראתא ארא מılması מילוריבש.
would be right, if they were judiciously chosen, and not so very particular and stringent. Some of their cautions are certainly just: as that לאמ תחתיא ארא בלשאיא ארח ניפות אתו מוסק בכר.
b | What should a man do to live? Mifhn.

c No monkery, no superstitious or phantastical mortifications are here recommended.
The Religion of Nature. Sect. IX.

The last clause of the proposition takes in a great compass. It will oblige men, if they do but think well what they are, and consequently what others of the same kind with themselves also are, not to be proud, conceited, vain; but modest, and humble, and rather diffident of themselves; not to censure the failings of others too hardly, not to be over-severe in punishing or exacting justice, and particularly not to be revengeful; but candid, placable, manuete: and so forth.

5. He ought to examine his own actions and conduct, and where he finds he has transgressed, to repent. That is, if the transgression be against his neighbour, and the nature of it admits, to make reparation, or at least as far as he can: in other cases, when that which is done cannot be recalled, or repaired, or terminates in himself only, to live however under a sense of his fault, and to prove by such acts as are proper, that he desires forgiveness, and heartily wishes it undone; which is as it were an essay towards the undoing of it, and all that now can be: and lastly, to use all possible care not to relapse. All this is involved in the idea of a fault, or action that is wrong, as it presents itself to a rational mind. For such a mind cannot approve what is unreasonable, and repugnant to truth; that is, what is wrong, or a fault: nay more, it cannot but disapprove it, detest it. No rational animal therefore can act according to truth, the true nature of himself and the idea of a crime, if he doth not endeavour not to commit it; and, when it is committed, to repair it, if he can, or at least shew himself to be penitent.

If when a man is criminal, he doth not behave himself as such; or, which is the same, behaves himself as being not such, he opposes truth confidently.

And further, to act agreeably to what he is supposed to find himself to be, is to act as one who is in danger of relapsing: which is to be upon his guard for the future.

6. He must labor to improve his rational faculties by such means, as are (fairly) practicable by him, and consistent with his circumstances. If it be a disadvantage to be obnoxious to error, and act in the dark, it is an advantage to know such truths as may prevent this: if so, it is a greater advantage to know, or be capable of knowing, more such truths: and then again, not to endeavour to improve
those faculties, by which these truths are apprehended, is to shut them out, as being not what they are.

And moreover, by the enlargement of our rational faculties we become more rational; that is, we advance our natures, and become more attentive to rational enjoyments.

The ordinary means indeed of improving our minds are the instruction of able men, reading, observation, meditation: but every man has not proper opportunities, or capacity for these, or but in some low degree; and no man is obliged beyond his abilities, and opportunities (by sect. IV. prop. II.) Therefore that mollification is added, by such means, &c.

Beside health, a comfortable and suitable provision of externals is so necessary to the well-being of the whole man, that without it the rational part cannot dwell easy, all pursuits of knowledge will be liable to interruption, and improvements (commonly) imperfect. And so reason itself (which cannot betray its own interest) must for its own sake concur in seeking and promoting that, which tends to the preservation and happiness of the whole. But the doing of this engrosses time and industry; and before that which is sought can be obtained (if it is ever obtained), probably the use of it is lost: except where men live by the profession of some part of learning.

And as to them who are more free from worldly cares, or whose business and employment brings them into a stricter acquaintance with letters, after all their endeavours (such is the great variety of human circumstances in other respects) they must be contented with several degrees and portions of knowledge. Some are blest with clean and strong constitutions, early instructions and other helps, succeeding encouragements, useful acquaintance, and freedom from disturbance: whilst others, under an ill state of body, or other disadvantages, are forced to be their own guides, and make their way as well as they can.

But notwithstanding all this, every man may in some degree or other endeavour to cultivate his nature, and possess himself of useful truths. And not to do this is (again) to cast off reason (which never can be reasonable), apostatize from humanity, and recoil into the bestial life.

---

* And perhaps as if our own minds were not what they are. For πάντες ἀδάμαντος ἦ σιδήναι Ὑγεία χόρτος. Arist. b Aristotle being asked, what he got by philosophy, answered, Τὸ ἀνθρώπινον τοῦτο τοῖς ἀδάμαντος τοῖς καθάρισθαι. And another time, how the learned differed from the unlearned, said, ὅτι οἱ ζώοι τῆς παντότητος τῶν παιδίων ἐκείνων ἐκ τὸν ἦλθον εἰς χάριν, ὅτι οἱ καθάρισθαι καθάρισθαι. D. Laert. c Ἀδάμαντος δ', ἂν ἄνωθεν, τὰ καλά πρότερον ἀκριβῶς ἐπιθύμον ἐπὶ πάσης πρώτης καθάρισθαι δι' ἀρχών, καθ. Arist. d Nam fuit quoddam tempus, sum in agris homines possum besiarum modo vagabantur, &c. Cic.
The Religion of Nature. Sect. IX.

7. He must attend to instruction, and even ask advice; especially in matters of consequence. Not to do this is to deny, that his faculties are limited and defective, or that he is fallible (which is contrary to that, which he is presumed to be conscious of); and perhaps, that it is possible for another to know what he doth not.

Advice every man is capable of hearing, and the meaker a man's own improvements are, the more doth truth press him to submit to the counsel and opinions of others. Nor is every one only capable, but every one wants upon some occasions to be informed. In how many countrey affairs must the scholar take the rustic for his master? In how many other men of business, traders and mechanics? And on the other side, in respect of how many things does the generality of the world want to be taught by them, who are learned and honest?

There is or should be a commerce or interchange of counsel and knowledge, as well as of other things; and where men have not these of their own growth, they should thankfully receive what may be imported from other quarters.

I do not mean, that a man ought implicitly and blindly to follow the opinion of another (this other being fallible too, as well as himself), unless he has in himself a good reason so to do, which many times happens; but by the assistance of another, and hearing what he has to say, to find out more certainly on which side reason, truth, and happiness (which always keep close together) do lie. And thus it is indeed a man's own reason at last, which governs.

He, who is governed by what another says (or does) without understanding it and making the reason of it his own, is not governed by his own reason, and that is, by no reason that he has. To say one is led by the nose (as we commonly speak) gives immediately the idea of a brute.

---

a The effect, which Xenocrates's lecture had upon Polemo, is remarkable: unius orationis saluberrima medicina fanatus, ex insanis ganeone maximus philosophus evasit. Val. M.

b Like them, who submit to their Hibakamim. In S. Iggur. Many more instances might easily be given.

c Not only we. Τός πνεύμα ἠλοκτέσθη was used in the same sense by the Greeks.

d Nihil magis præstandum est, quam ne, pecorum ritus, sequamur antecedentium geregmen, pergentes non qua eundum est, sed qua itur. Sen. Something may perhaps be expected in this place concerning vogue and fashion, which seem to be public declarations of some general opinion; shewing how far they ought to sways with us. I think, so far as to keep us from being contemned, derided, or marked, where that may lawfully and conveniently be done; especially in respect of trifling and little matters. But further a wife man will scarce mind them.

That is a good sentence in Demophilus, Ποιν ἥνοιν ἵναι καλὰ, καὶ ποιῶν μάλις ἁδέρσωμ. φανερῶς ἦν μιτις καλὶ πχγνατε. ὦ, ὁλκερον. 

Lastly,
Truths belonging to a Private Man, &c. 179

Lastly, He must labor to clear his mind of those preoccupations and incumbrances which hang about it, and hinder him from reasoning freely, and judging impartially. We set out in life from such poor beginnings of knowledge, and grow up under such remains of superstition and ignorance, such influences of company and fashion, such insinuations of pleasure, &c. that it is no wonder, if men get habits of thinking only in one way; that these habits in time grow confirmed and obstinate; and so their minds come to be overcast with thick prejudices, scarce penetrable by any ray of truth or light of reason. He therefore, who would use his rational faculties, must in the first place disentangle them, and render them fit to be used: and he, who doth not do this, doth hereby declare, that he doth not intend to use them; that is, he proclaims himself irrational, contrary to truth, if supposition the fourth be true.

The sum of all is this: it is the duty of every man, if that word expresses such a being as is before described, to behave himself in all respects (which I cannot pretend to enumerate) as far as he is able according to reason. And from hence it will follow, further, that,

IV. Every man is obliged to live virtuously and piously. Because to practice reason, and truth is to live after that manner. For from the contents of the foregoing sections it is apparent, that one cannot practice reason (or act according to truth) without behaving himself reverently and dutifully toward that Almighty being, on whom he depends; nor without justice and a tender regard to the properties of other men: that is, unless his enjoyments be free from impiety, virtuous and harmless. And as to those virtues, which respect a man's self, the same thing will be as apparent, when I have told what I mean by some of the principal ones.

Prudence, the queen of virtues, is nothing but choosing (after things have been duly weighed) and using the most reasonable means to obtain some end, that is reasonable. This is therefore directly the exercise of reason.

Temperance permits us to take meat and drink not only as physic for hunger and thirst, but also as an innocent cordial and fortifier against the evils of life, or even sometimes, reason not refusing that liberty, merely as matter of pleasure. It only confines us to such kinds, quantities, and seasons, as may best consist with our health,

---

* Ipsa virtus brevissimè reùta ratio dixi posse. Cic.  **Qua non alius est quàm reùta ratio. Sen.**  
* Idem esse diceret Socrates veritatem òn virtutem. Id.  **Viz. That a man cannot practice reason without practicing them.**  
* Τά τι ιόντα, τά τι íστημινα, πώς τι ιόντα.  **That saying of Timotheus to Plato, with whom he had stayed the night before in the Academy, should be remembered.**  
The Religion of Nature. Sect. IX.

the use of our faculties, our fortune, &c. and shew, that we do not think ourselves made only to eat and drink here; that is, such as speak us to be what we are.

Chastity does not pretend to extinguish our tender passions, or cancel one part of our nature: it only bids us not to indulge them against reason and truth; not give up the man to humor the brute; nor hurt others to please our selves; to divert our inclinations by business, or some honest amusement, till we can gratify them lawfully, conveniently, regularly; and even then to participate of the mysteries of love with modesty, as within a veil or sacred inclosure, not with a canine impudence.

Frugality indeed looks forward, and round about; not only considers the man himself, but compassionates his family; knows, that, when the exactest computation is made that can be beforehand, there will still be found many unforeseen desiderata in the calendar of his expences; is apprehensive of the world, and accidents, and new occasions, that may arise, tho' they are not yet in being; and therefore endears wisely to lay in as much, as may give him some kind of security against future wants and casualties, without which provision no man, whose sense is not quite lost, or circumscribed within the present minute, can be very easy. To this end it not only cuts off all profusion and extravagance, but even deducts something from that, which according to the present appearance might be afforded; and chooses rather that he should live upon half allowance now, than be exposed (or expose any body else) to the danger of starving hereafter, when full meals and former plenty shall make poverty and fasting more unendurable. But still it forbids no instance of generosity, or even magnificence, which is agreeable to the man's station and circumstances, or (which is tantamount) to the truth of his case.

---

a Corpus omne Fortesiri vitio animam quoq; praevarat und, &c. Hor.

b Quibus in solo vivendi causa palato cf. Juv. Sic prandete commilitones tanquam apud inferos canaturi (Leonid. ap. Val. M.) may be turned to a general memento, no man knowing, how near his death may be.

c T. Tidian.—calo, 'Epavni καπων. Arr.

d Venereim incertam rapientes, more feratun Hor.

e In which words are comprehended naturally (Το μιρ τας παξι φων νενιεα διω-κεν). Not as Crates and Hipparchia (of whom see Diog. L. Sex. Emp. &c. al.), and indeed the Cynics in general are said to have done: quibus in pœsibve coire cum congudigebus nos sui Laetian. Of whom therefore Cicero says with good reason, Cynicorum ratio [al. natio] tota ef ejicienda. Est enim inimica verecundia, sine qua nihil rectum esse potest. nihil honestum. Non ruinam y^n καπων καπων, [UNW.]. S. Hias. That in Herodotus, Αυσ κάπων καθορμαγ συνεκδοσι & τις καπων καπων ought not to be true. Verecundia naturali habent providum lapana ira secretum. Ang.

f Eo το τις τοις δικας γενικος καπων q. Ph. f.

g Simonides was wont to say, Βαλομαίον &c. κατα-

h Non intelligunt dominas quidem magnam veteralem sit parsimonia. Cic. Like them, who ευ τις πιστη τις καπως ϕρόδια τρα-

i Ec liberalitate uamur, qua profite amicit, noceat nemini.
Truths belonging to a Private Man, &c. 181

After the same manner I might proceed upon other particular virtues. But my notion of them must by this time be sufficiently understood: and therefore I shall only give this general advice. That you may take the truer prospect of any act, place your self in your imagination beyond it (beyond it in time), and suppose it already done, and then see how it looks; always remembering, that a long repentance is a disproportionate price for a short injoyment. Or, fancy it done by some other man, and then view it in that speculum: we are commonly sharper-sighted in discerning the faults of others, than of ourselves a. And further, as to those virtues, which are said to consist in the mean, it may be sometimes safer to incline a little more to one of the extremes, than to the other: as, rather to stinginess, than prodigality; rather to inflexibility, and even a degree of ill nature, than to dangerous complaisance, or easiness in respect of vice, and such things as may be hurtful; and so on b.

Since then to live virtuously is to practice reason and act conformably to truth, he, who lives so, must be ultimately happy, by sect. II. prop. XIV. and therefore not only the commands of reason, but even the desire of happiness (a motive, that cannot but work strongly upon all who think) will oblige a man to live so.

It may be collected even from experience, that the virtuous life compared with the contrary, if one looks no further than the present state, is the happier life e; or, that the virtuous pleasures, when the whole account is made up, are the truer d. Who sees not, that the vicious life is full of dangers and solicitudes, and usually ends ill; perhaps in rottenness and rags, or at least in a peevish and despicable discontent e?

I am not of opinion, that virtue can make a man happy upon a rack, under a violent fit of the stone, or the like f; or that virtue and prudence can always exempt him from wants and sufferings, mend a strait fortune, or rectify an ill constitu-

---

a Non est incommodum, quale quodq; — fit, ex aliis judicare: ut si quid dedeactus in aliis, virtuum & ipsi. Et enim nescio quo modo, ut magis in aliis cernamus, quam in nobismet ipsi, si quid delinguatur. Cic.

b Even Epicurus himself εὐχαριστεῖ τῷ θεῷ τινὶ τῶν ἄρσεων μονὰς and in Αἴγυπτω γὰρ ἀγερεῖς διὸ ἀγαθῶς. Diog. L.

c Socrates gives one reason for this, where he compares vicious pleasures with virtue. Ἐπεὶ ρύποι πρὸ τοῖς ἐδείκται, ἐξεχειρεὶ λυπηθημένος ἐν τῶν γάταις τῆς ἀγερεῖς τοῖς ἀγαθῶς ἐχομεν. Whereas virtue is ἱσότερος τῶν γέρων. Bias ap. S. Bof.

d For who can bear such rants as that, Epicurus ait, ιαόπιτεστι, εἰ τὰ κακά ἀνθρώπους ἐξεφαρνάται καὶ τὸ θεραπεύεται. Hecato librum perpetuavi: or him, qui non foret videre, cum ob hoc ipsum irati tortores omnia instrumenta crudelitatis experimentur. Sen.
The Religion of Nature. Sect. IX.

The Religion of Nature. Sect. IX.

tion: amidst so many enemies to virtue, so many infirmities as attend life, he cannot but be sometimes affected. But I have said, and say again, that the natural and usual effect of virtue is happiness; and if a virtuous man should in some respects be unhappy, yet still his virtue will make him less unhappy: for at least he enjoys inward tranquillity, and a breast conscious of no evil. And which kind of life I pray ought one to prefer: that, which naturally tends to happiness, tho it may be disturbed; or that, which naturally tends to unhappiness? In brief, virtue will make a man here, in any given circumstances, as happy as a man can be in those circumstances: or however it will make him happy hereafter in some other state: for ultimately, all taken together, happy he must be.

Some may possibly wonder, why among virtues I have not so much as once named one of the cardinal, and the only one perhaps which they pretend to: I mean fortitude. That that, by which so many heroes have triumphed over enemies, even the greatest, death itself; that, which distinguishes nations, raises empires, has been the grand theme of almost all wits, attracts all eyes, opens all mouths, and assumes the name of virtue by way of excellence; that this should be forgot!

To atone for this omission I will make this appendix to the foregoing brief account. If fortitude be taken for natural courage (i.e. strength, activity, plenty of spirits, and a contempt of dangers resulting from these), this is constitution and the gift of God, not any virtue in us: because if it be our virtue, it must consist in something, which we produce, or do ourselves. The cafe is the same with that of fine features and complexion, a large inheritance, or strong walls, which may indeed be great advantages, but were never called virtues. To have these is not virtue, but to use them rightly, or according to reason, if we have them.

That this is justly said, may perhaps appear from what is to be said on the other side. It may be a man's misfortune, that he has not more courage, a greater stock of spirits, firmer health, and stronger limbs, if he has a just occasion to use them; but it never can be reckon'd a vice or fault not to use what he has not: for otherwise it might be a crime not to be able to carry ten thousand pound weight, or outrun a cannon-ball.

---

a. El (ῥήμα εὐγενέστερον ἔστι, ἑте πινακότα τος ἰδουκα Ὀμν. 

b. Propter virtutem iure laudamus, & in virtute rellre gloriamur. Quod non continget, si id donum à deo, non à nobis habemus. Cic. 

c. As that word is used here. For when it is used as in that ap. Luc. 'Αριστή μὴ χωματα εἰς, and the like passages, it has another meaning.
Truths belonging to a Private Man, &c. 183

Fortitude considered as a virtue consists in standing and endeavouring to overcome dangers and oppositions, when they cannot be avoided without the violation of reason and truth. Here it is, that he, who is endow'd with natural bravery, a healthful constitution, good bones and muscles, ought to use them, and be thankful to the Doner: and he who is not so favor'd, must yet do what he can: if he cannot conquer, he must endeavour to be patient and prudent. And thus he, who is naturally timorous, or weak, or otherwise infirm, may have as much, or more of the virtue of fortitude, than the hero himself; who apprehends little, and feels little, compared with the other, or possibly may find pleasure in a scene of dangerous action.

If a man can prevent, or escape any peril or trouble, salvâ veritate, he ought to do it: otherwise he neither considers himself, nor them as being what they are; them not as unnecessary, himself not as capable of being hurt by them; and so dashes against truth on the worse side. But where that cannot be done, he must exert himself according to his abilities, whether great or little, and refer the success to the Divine providence. This is the true virtue of fortitude, which is nothing but endeavouring firmly and honestly to act as truth requires; and therefore is directly deducible from that notion, on which we have founded the morality of human acts.

It has for its object not only adversaries, noxious animals, and bold undertakings, but in general all the evils of life; which a man must labor by prudence to ward off, and where this cannot be done to bear with resignation, decency, and an humble expectation of an adjustment of all events in a future state: the belief of which I am now going to prove, in my manner, to be no vain nor groundless conceit.

V. Every one, that finds himself as before in prop. I. finds in himself at the same time a consciousness of his own existence and acts (which is life), with a power of apprehending, thinking, reasoning, willing, beginning and stopping many kinds and degrees of motion in his own members, &c. He, who has not these powers, has no power to dispute this with me: therefore I can perceive no room for any dispute here, unless it be concerning the power of beginning motion. For they, who say there is always the same quantity of motion in the world, must not allow the production of any new; and therefore must suppose the animal spirits not to

---

*a* ἡ μάρτισθεν ἑαυτῷ ἐντὸς ἦς τίνι Νεών. Ἐνιαύτω, ἐκεὶ ἐνιαυτῷ ἐκεῖνῳ, ἐν τῇ ἐκεῖνῃ ἡμερᾳ κατευκολογήθη—ἐκαθόρισεν ἰδιαίτερα ἄλλας ἀνθρώπους ἐν ὑποτασεῖ αὐτῷ ὑπάρχουσι. Ph. F. Non in viribus corporis et laceritis tantummodo fortitudinis gloria est, sed magis in virtute animi.—Fure en fortitudo vocatur, quando mens sui seipsum vincit, iram continet, nullis ili- tecebris emolli, aut aequo inflectitur, non adversis perturbatur, non extollitur secundis, &c. S. Ambr.

*b* Qui se ipse norit, primum aliiquid sentit, semper habere divinum, &c. Cic.
be put into motion by the mind, but only being already in motion to receive from it their directions into these or those canals, according as it intends to move this or that limb. But to this may be answered, that, if the mind can give these new directions and turns to the spirits, this serves my purpose as well, and what I intend will follow as well from it. And besides, it could not do this, if it could not excite those spirits being at rest.

It is plain I can move my hand upward or downward or horizontally, faster or slower or not at all, or stop it when it is in motion, just as I will. Now if my hand and those parts and spirits, by which it is put into motion, were left to be governed by the law of gravitation, or by any motions already impressed upon them, the effects would be determined by rules of mechanism, and be necessary: the motion or rest of my hand would not attend upon my will, and be alterable upon a thought at my pleasure. If then I have (as I am sensible I have) a power of moving my hand in a manner, which it would not move in by those laws, that mere bodies already in motion or under the force of gravitation would observe, this motion depends solely upon my will, and begins there a.

VI. That, which in man is the subject or suppositum of self-consciousness, thinks, and has the foresaid faculties, must be something different from his body or carcass.

For, first, he doth not I suppose find himself to think, see, hear, &c. all over, in any part of his body: but the seat of cogitation and reflection he finds in his head b: and the nerves, by which the knowledge of external objects are conveyed to him, all tend to the same place. It is plain something, which resides there c, in the region of the brain, that by the mediation of these nerves governs the body and moves the parts of it (as by so many reins, or wires) d, feels what is done to it, sees through the eyes, hears through the ears, &c. e.

---

a  Ei quius quidem oculis certimus ex, que videmus: neque enim est ullus sensus in corpore, sed—via quas quaedam sunt ad oculos, ad aures, ad nares a se de animi perforata. Itaque sepe aut cogitatione, aut aliqua vi morbi impediti, aperiis atque integris oculis & auriis, nec videmus, nec audimur: ut facile intelligi posset, animam & videre, & audire, non eas partes, quas quasi fenescere sunt animi: quibus semen sentire nihil quent mens, nisi id agat, & adscit. Cic.

b  Which, ć οί θυρίον, διότι ἐστι η Αμαζών. Artem.

c  Ὁσα ὁ

d  ά το

e  Nox ne nunc quidem oculis certimus ex, que videmus: neque
Truths belonging to a Private Man, &c. 185

Upon amputation of a limb * this thing (whatever it is) is not found to be diminished b, nor any of its faculties lost. Its sphere of acting, while it is confined to the body, is only contracted, and part of its instrumentality lost. It cannot make use of that which is not, or which it has not.

If the eyes be shut, or the ears stop, it cannot then see, or hear: but remove the obstruction, and it instantly appears that the faculty, by which it apprehends the impressions made upon the organs of sensation, remaind all that while intire; and that so it might have done, if the eyes, or ears had never been open again; or, if the eyes had been out, or the ears quite disabled. This shews in general, that, when any sense or faculty seems to be impaired or lost by any bodily hurt, after a fever, or through age, this doth not come to pass, because it is the body that perceives and has these faculties in itself: but because the body looses its instrumentality, and gives that which is the true subject of these faculties no opportunity of exerting them, or of exerting them well: tho it retains them as much as in the case before, when the eyes or ears were only shut c. Thus distinct are it and its faculties from the body and its affections. I will now call it the soul.

Again, as a man peruses and considers his own body, doth it not undeniably appear to be something different from the considerer? And when he uses this expression my body, or the body of me, may it not properly be demanded, who is meant by me, or what my relates to? It cannot be the body itself: that cannot say of itself, it is my body, or the body of me. And yet this way of speaking we naturally fall into, from an inward and habitual sense of our selves, and what we are, even tho we do not advert upon it.

What I mean is this. A man being supposed a person consisting of two parts, soul and body, the whole person may say of this or that part of him, the soul of me, or the body of me: but if he was either all soul, or all body, and nothing else, he could not then speak in this manner: because it would be the same as to say the soul of the soul, or the body of the body, or the I of me. The pronoun therefore (in that saying my body, or the body of me) must stand for something else, to which the body belongs d; or at least for something, of which it is only a part, viz. the person of the whole man e. And then even this implies, that there is another part of him, which is not body.

* Or even destrae corpore multa, as Lucretius speaks.

b Πολλάκις καὶ Τα χαμόν έΤα πεδών ἐνσωματικον, ἑλκετης ἦ λημ [ες ψυχῆς] μωις. Chryl.

c Therefore Aristotle says, if an old man had a young man's eye, βλάστηται ὑπὸ ωφων ἤ ὑ νοΐς. Οί νεοὶ το ρήμα, ἃ τῷ τῶν ψυχῶν περιουσίαν τι, ἀλλ' εἰς ὑ πὸ κυητερίας ὑπὸ μοῖχες ἢ υψίας, κ.π. d Hierocles (with others) accounts the soul to be the true man. Συ μέ ον γε ψυχῆς ἢ σώμα ἠμαίνεται. So Plato ules 'Ανθρώποις for the whole of the man; by which the soul, as one part of it, is called κτήμα.
It is plain there are two different interests in men, on the one side reason, on
the other passion: which, being many times directly opposite, must belong to dif-
ferent subjects. There are upon many occasions contests, and as it were wars be-
tween the mind and the body: so far are they from being the same thing.

Lastly, there is we may perceive something within us, which supports the body
(keeps it up), directs its motion for the better preservation of it, when any hurts
or evils befall it, finds out the means of its cure, and the like; without which
it would fall to the ground, and undergo the fate of common matter. The body
therefore must be consider'd as being under the direction and tuition of some
other thing, which is (or should be) the governor of it, and consequently upon
this account must be concluded to be different from it.

VII. The soul cannot be mere matter. For if it is, then either all matter must
think; or the difference must arise from the different modification, magnitude,
figure, or motion b of some parcels of matter in respect of others; or a faculty
of thinking must be superadded to some systems of it, which is not superadded
to others. But,

In the first place, that position, which makes all matter to be cogitative, is con-
trary to all the apprehensions and knowledge we have of the nature of it; nor can
it be true, unless our senses and faculties be contrived only to deceive us. We per-
ceive not the least symptom of cogitation, or sense in our tables, chairs, &c.

Why doth the scene of thinking lie in our heads, and all the ministers of sen-
sation make their reports to something there, if all matter be apprehensive, and co-
gitative? For in that case there would be as much thought and understanding
in our heels, and every were else, as in our heads.

If all matter be cogitative, then it must be so quatenus matter, and thinking must
be of the essence and definition of it: whereas by matter no more is meant but a
substance extended and impenetrable to other matter. And since, for this reason,
it cannot be necessary for matter to think (because it may be matter without this
property), it cannot think as matter only.

If it did, we should not only continue to think always, till the matter of which
we confit is annihilated, and fo the affessor of this doctrine would stumble upon

a φάνεται ηο ἄντος ὑπὸ ὑπὸ τε παθεῖ ἵ ἄνοιχτον ἑικός. ὥ μενας τε η ἄντος ἡ ἄνοιχτα. Arist.
b Whether any form, modification, or motion of matter can be a human soul, seems to be much such
another question as that in one of Seneca's epistles, An justitia, an fortitudo, prudentia, ceteraque vir-
tutes, animalia sint.
immortality unawares; but we must also have thought always in time past, ever since that matter was in being; nor could there be any the least intermission of actual thinking: which does not appear to be our case.

If thinking, self-consciousness, &c. were essential to matter, every part of it must have them: and then no system could have them. For a system of material parts would be a system of things conscious every one by itself of its own existence and individuality, and consequently thinking by itself: but there could be no one act of self-consciousness or thought common to the whole. Juxtaposition in this case could signify nothing: the distinction and individuation of the several particles would be as much retain'd in their vicinity, as if they were separated by miles.

In the next place, the faculties of thinking, &c. cannot arise from the size, figure, texture, or motion of it: because bodies by the alteration of these only become greater or less; round or square, &c. rare, or dense; translated from one place to another with this or that new direction, or velocity; or the like: all which ideas are quite different from that of thinking; there can be no relation between them. These modifications and affections of matter are so far from being principles or causes of thinking and acting, that they are themselves but effects, proceeding from the action of some other matter or thing upon it, and are proofs of its passivity, deadness, and utter incapacity of becoming cogitative. This is evident to sense.

They, who place the essence of the soul in a certain motion given to some matter (if any such men there really be) should consider, among many other things, that to move the body spontaneously is one of the faculties of the soul; and that this, which is the same with the power of beginning motion, cannot come from motion already begun, and impress ab extra.

Let the materialist examine well, whether he does not feel something within himself, that acts from an internal principle: whether he doth not experience some liberty some power of governing himself, and choosing: whether he does not enjoy a kind of invisible empire, in which he commands his own thoughts, sends them to this or that place, employs them about this or that business, forms such and such designs.

---

a Νας εὖν σώμα γενώς: πάντα ὃ ἐν τὰ ἀνέντα ἑων γενότα. Sallust.

b That the soul is the principle of motion, or that which begins it in us, is (tho it wants no testimony) often said by the ancients. Φυσιτί ὃ ἐνα, κ' ἀνέντα, ξε πρώτως ψυχή εἴην τὸ κύριον. Arist. Ἡ ψυχὴ τὸ ὑποκύριον τὰ σώματα, κ' ἀντοκινιστον. Simp. 'Αγαθόν κύριον. Plotin.

c Ἡ ψυχὴ πειγωσι πάσιν ὑπὸ, ὥστε γίνει ἐν ἐρωτ. et. Max. I.
designs and schemes: and whether there is any thing like this in bare matter, however fashioned, or proportioned; which, if nothing should protrude or communicate motion to it, would for ever remain fixt to the place where it happens to be, an external monument of its own being dead. Can such an active being as the soul is, the subject of so many powers, be itself nothing but an accident?

When I begin to move myself, I do it for some reason, and with respect to some end, the means to effect which I have, if there be occasion for it, concerted within myself: and this doth not at all look like motion merely material (or, in which matter is only concern'd), which is all mechanical. Who can imagine matter to be moved by arguments, or ever placed syllogisms and demonstrations among levers and pulleys?

We not only move ourselves upon reasons, which we find in our selves, but upon reasons imparted by words or writing from others, or perhaps merely at their desire or bare suggestion. In which case, again, no body sure can imagine, that the words spoken or written (the sound in the air, or the strokes on the paper) can by any natural or mechanical efficiency cause the reader or hearer to move in any determinate manner (or at all). The reason, request, or friendly admonition, which is the true motive, can make no impression upon matter. It must be some other kind of being, that apprehends the force and sense of them.

Do not we see in conversation, how a pleasant thing said makes people break out into laughter, a rude thing into passion, and so on? These affections cannot be the physical effects of the words spoken: because then they would have the same effect, whether they were underflood, or not. And this is further demonstrable from hence, that tho' the words do really contain nothing, which is either pleasant, or rude, or perhaps words are thought to be spoken, which are not spoken; yet if they are apprehended to do that, or the sound to be otherwise than it was, the effect will be the same. It is therefore the sense of the words, which is an immaterial thing, that by passing through the understanding and causing that, which is the subject of the intellectual faculties, to influence the body, produces these motions in the spirits, blood, muscles.

* What a ridiculous argument for the materiality of the soul is that in Lucretius? Ubi propellere membra, Conipere ex somno corpus, &c. videtur (Quorum nil fieri sine tactu posse videmus, Nec tactum porro sine corpore); nonne fatendum est Corpora naturae animam confiare animam? If nothing can move the body, but another body, what moves this? The body might as well move itself, as be moved by one that does.

b Τάξισις τῆς ψυχῆς παρῆς ἓν τείχῳ. Thal. ap. Diog. L.
Truths belonging to a Private Man, &c. 189

They, who can fancy, that matter may come to live, think, and act spontaneously, by being reduced to a certain magnitude, or having its parts placed after a certain manner, or being invested with such a figure, or excited by such a particular motion: they, I say, would do well to discover to us that degree of fineness, that alteration in the situation of its parts, &c. at which matter may begin to find itself alive and cogitative; and which is the critical minute, that introduces these important properties. If they cannot do this, nor have their eye upon any particular crisis, it is a sign they have no good reason for what they say. For if they have no reason to charge this change upon any particular degree or difference, one more than another, they have no reason to charge it upon any degree or difference at all; and then they have no reason, by which they can prove that such a change is made at all. Besides all which, since magnitude, figure, motion are but accidents of matter, not matter, and only the substance is truly matter; and since the substance of any one part of matter does not differ from that of another, if any matter can be by nature cogitative, all must be so. But this we have seen cannot be.

So then in conclusion, if there is any such thing as matter that thinks, &c. this must be a particular privilege granted to it: that is, a faculty of thinking must be superadded to certain parts or parcels of it. Which, by the way, must infer the existence of some Being able to confer this faculty; who, when the ineptness of matter has been well considered, cannot appear to be less than omnipotent, or God. But the truth is, matter seems not to be capable of such improvement, of being made to think. For since it is not of the essence of matter, it cannot be made to be so without making matter another kind of substance from what it is. Nor can it be made to arise from any of the modifications or accidents of matter; and in respect of what else can any matter be made to differ from other matter.

The accidents of matter are so far from being made by any power to produce cperation, that some even of them shew it incapable of having a faculty of thinking superadded. The very divisibility of it does this. For that which is made to think must either be one part, or more parts joined together. But we know no such thing as a part of matter purely one (or indivisible). It may indeed have pleased the Author of nature, that there should be atoms, whose parts are actually indiscernible, and which may be the principles of other bodies: but still they consist of parts, tho firmly adhering together. And if the seat of cognition be in more parts than one (whether they lie close together, or are loose, or in a state of fluidity, it is the same thing), how can it be avoided, but that either there must be so many several minds, or thinking substances, as there are parts (and then the consequence, which has been mentioned, would return upon us again);
or else, that there must be something else superadded for them to center in, to unite their acts, and make their thoughts to be one? And then what can this be, but some other substance, which is purely one?

Matter by itself can never entertain abstracted and general ideas, such as many in our minds are. For could it reflect upon what passes within itself, it could possibly find there nothing but material and particular impressions; abstractions and metaphysical ideas could not be printed upon it. How could one abstract from matter who is himself nothing but matter? And then as to material images themselves, which are usually supposed to be impressed upon the brain (or some part of it), and stock the phantasy and memory, that which peruses the impressions and traces there (or any where) must be something distinct from the brain, or that upon which these impressions are made: otherwise it must contemplate itself, and be both reader and book. And this other distinct contemplating being cannot be merely corporeal, any more than the body can perceive and think without a soul. For such a corporeal being must require senses, and suitable organs, to perceive and read these characters and vestigia of things; and so another organized body would be introduced, and the same questions and difficulties redoubled, concerning the soul of that body and its faculties.

If my soul was mere matter, external visible objects could only be perceived within me according to the impressions they make upon matter, and not otherwise. Ex. gr. the image of a cube in my mind (or my idea of a cube) must be always under some particular prospect, and conform to the rules of perspective; nor could I otherwise represent it to myself: whereas now I can form an idea of it as it is in itself, and almost view all its beds at once, as it were incompassing it with my mind.

I can within myself correct the external appearances and impressions of objects; and advance, upon the reports and hints received by my senses, to form ideas of things that are not extant in matter. By seeing a material circle I may learn to form the idea of a circle, or figure generated by the revolution of a ray about its center: but then recollecting what I know of matter upon other occasions, I can conclude there is no exact material circle. So that I have an idea, which perhaps was raised from the hints I received from without, but is not truly to be found there. If I see a tower at a great distance, which according to the impressions made upon my

* Diogenes, tho' he could see the table, and the pot, could not by his eyes see Plato's ἀναπλήρωσις, & καθηκόν. Diog. L.

* Plato, & i. οὐκ ἐστὶ (more generally) say, that the soul indeed perceives objects of sense by the mediation of the body; but there are neon, which it doth ἐκ τοῦ φυσικοῦ. Id.

* Such a soul must be indeed as Greg. Thaum. has it, ὁμοία ἡμαρχεῖαν. Ἀποτελεῖ ἡ πρῶτη ἡμαρχεῖα λάθος.
Truths belonging to a Private Man, &c. 191

material organs seems little and round, I do not therefore conclude it to be either: there is something within, that reasons upon the circumstances of the appearance, and as it were commands my sense, and corrects the impression: and this must be something superior to matter, since a material soul is no otherwise impenetrable itself, but as material organs are. Instances of this kind are endless. (v. p. 33, 34.)

If we know anything of matter, we know, that by itself it is a lifeless thing, inert, and passive only; and acts necessarily (or rather is acted) according to the laws of motion and gravitation. This passiveness seems to be essential to it. And if we know anything of our selves, we know, that we are conscious of our own existence and acts (i.e. that we live); that we have a degree of freedom; that we can move our selves spontaneously; and in short, that we can, in many instances, take off the effect of gravitation, and imprefs new motions upon our spirits (or give them new directions), only by a thought. Therefore to make mere matter do all this is to change the nature of it; to change death into life, incapacity of thinking into coticativity, necessity into liberty. And to say, that God may superadd a faculty of thinking, moving itself, &c. to matter, if by this be meant, that he may make matter to be the supposition of these faculties (that substance, in which they inhere), is the same in effect as to say, that God may superadd a faculty of thinking to incogitativity, or acting freely to necessity, and so on. What sense is there in this? And yet so it must be, while matter continues to be matter.

That faculty of thinking, so much talked of by some as superadded to certain systems of matter, fitly disposed, by virtue of God's omnipotence, tho' it be so called, must in reality amount to the same thing as another substance with the faculty of thinking. For a faculty of thinking alone will not make up the idea of a human soul, which is induced with many faculties; apprehending, reflecting, comparing, judging, making deductions and reasoning, willing, putting the body in motion, continuing the animal functions by its presence, and giving life; and therefore, whatever it is that is superadded, it must be something which is induced with all those other faculties. And whether that can be a faculty of thinking, and so these other faculties be only faculties of a faculty; or whether they must not all be rather the faculties of some sub-

* This is worse than ψυχας ψυχας in Max. Tyr. and the place just before cited. The author of the Essay conc. Hum. Underst. has himself exploded it, or what is very like it. To ask, says he, whether the will has freedom, is to ask, whether one power has another power, one ability another ability; a question at first sight too grossly absurd to make a dispute, or need an answer. For who is it that sees not, that powers belong only to agents, and are attributes only of substances, and not of powers themselves? There is, if my memory does not deceive me, another passage some where in the same book as much (or more) to my purpose: but at present I cannot find it.
The Religion of Nature. Sect. IX.

191 The Religion of Nature. Sect. IX.

stance, which, being (by their own concession) superadded to matter, must be different from it, I do leave the unprejudiced to determin.

If men would but seriously look into themselves, I am persuaded the soul would not appear to them as a faculty of the body, or kind of appurtenance to it; but rather as some substance, properly placed in it, not only to use it as an instrument, and act by it, but also to govern it (or the parts of it; as the tongue, hands, feet, &c.) according to its own reason. For I think it is plain enough, that the mind, tho' it acts under great limitations, doth however in many instances govern the body arbitrarily: and it is monstrous to suppose this governor to be nothing but some fit disposition or accident (superadded) of that matter which is governed. A ship it is true would not be fit for navigation, if it was not built and provided in a proper manner: but then, when it has its proper form, and is become a system of materials fitly disposed, it is not this disposition that governs it. It is the man, that other substance, who sits at the helm, and they, who manage the fails and tackle, that do this. So our vessels without a proper organization and conformity of parts would not be capable of being acted as they are; but still it is not the shape, or modification, or any other accident, that can govern them. The capacity of being governed or used can never be the governor, applying and using that capacity. No there must be at the helm something distinct, that commands the body, and without which it would run adrift, or rather sink.

For the foregoing reasons it seems to me, that matter cannot think, cannot be made to think. But if a faculty of thinking can be superadded to a system of matter, without uniting an immaterial substance to it; I say, if this can be, yet a human body is not such a system, being plainly void of thought, and organized in such a manner as to transmit the impressions of sensible objects up to the brain, where the percipient, and that which reflects upon them, certainly resides: and therefore that, which there apprehends, thinks, and wills, must be that system of matter to which a faculty of thinking is superadded. All the premisses then well considered, judge I beseech you, whether instead of saying, that this inhabitant of our heads (the soul) is a system of matter, to which a faculty of thinking is superadded, it might not be more reasonable to say, it is a thinking substance intimately united to some fine material vehicle, which has its residence in the brain.

If the soul is only an accident (or attribute) of the body, how comes this accident to have (or be the support of) other accidents, contrary ones too? As when we say, ἐνεξεκιλεδε τὸν ἀνθρώπον. Plato. S. Haenm. S. Haenm. Or, if to a thinking substance can be superadded the modification of solidity. Which way of speaking, tho' I do not remember to have met with it any where, nor doth it seem to differ much from the other, yet would please me better.

Tho
Truths belonging to a Private Man, &c. 193

Tho I understand not perfectly the manner, how a cogitative and spiritual substance can be thus closely united to such a material vehicle; yet I can understand this union as well, as how it can be united to the body in general (perhaps, as how the particles of the body itself cohere together), and much better than how a thinking faculty can be superadded to matter: and beside, several phenomena may more easily be solved by this hypothesis; which (tho I shall not pertinaciously maintain it) in short is this. Viz. that the human soul is a cogitative substance, clothed in a material vehicle, or rather united to it, and as it were inseparably mixt (I had almost said incorporated) with it: that these act in conjunction, that, which affects the one, affecting the other: that the soul is detained in the body (the head or brain) by some sympathy or attraction between this material vehicle and it, till the habituation is spoild, and this mutual tendency interrupted (and perhaps turned into an aversion, that makes it fly off), by some hurt, or disease, or by the decays and ruins of old age, or the like, happening to the body: and that in the interrim by means of this vehicle motions and impressions are communicated to and fro. But of this perhaps something more by and by.

VIII. The soul of man subsists after the dissolution of his body: or, is immortal. For,

1. If it is immaterial, it is indiscernible, and therefore incapable of being dissolved or demoliished, as bodies are. Such a being can only perish by annihilation: that is, it will continue to subsist and live, if some other being, able to do this, doth not by a particular act annihilate it. And if there is any reason to believe, that at the death of every man there is always such a particular annihilation, let him that knows it produce it. Certainly to reduce any substance into nothing requires just the same power as to convert nothing into something: and I fancy they, who deny the immortality of the soul, will be cautious how they admit any such power.

2. If the soul could be material; that is, if there could be any matter, that might be the subject of those faculties of thinking, willing, &c. yet still, since we cannot but be sensible, that all these are faculties of the self-same thing; and that all the several acts of the mind are acts of the same thing, each of them individual and truly one: I say, since it is so, this matter must be so perfectly united in itself, so absolutely

* It is worth our consideration, whether active power be not the proper attribute of spirit, and passive power of matter. Hence may be conjectured, that created spirits are not totally separate from matter, because they are both active and passive. Pure spirit, viz. God, is only active; pure matter is only passive; those beings, that are both active and passive, we may judge to partake of both. Hum. Underalt.

b This is Socrates's argument in Plato. The soul is altogether αὐτάνωσε, and therefore αὐτάνομος, Which Cicero interprets thus: nec disceperi, nec diserabi potest; nec intempe igitur.
lately one, as no matter knowable by us can be. And then the least that can be allowed is that it should be truly solid, and not actually indivisible; that is, such as no natural cause could destroy.

To introduce matter with a faculty of thinking, or a thinking matter, is to introduce matter with a new and opposite property; and that is to introduce a new species of matter*, which will differ essentially from the other common unthinking kind, as any species whatsoever doth from its opposite in scala praedicamentali, even as body doth from spirit. For thinking and unthinking differ as corporeal and incorporeal. And if so, this thinking matter must always continue to think, till either it is annihilated, or there is a transmutation of one species into another; and to take refuge in either of these expectations is at least to expect omnipotence should interpose to help out a bad cause.

If any one should say, that God might by virtue of his omnipotence superadd to certain parcels of matter a fourth dimension, I should not perhaps dispute the Divine power: but I might say, that such matter, existing under four dimensions, would essentially differ from that, which cannot exist under four, or which can exist but only under three; and that this four-dimensional matter must always remain such, because no substance can be changed into or become another, essentially different, nor do we know of any, that by the course of nature ceases totally to be, or is reduced to nothing.

3. The next argument shall proceed by way of objection and answer. Because a removal of the principal objection against any thing is a good argument for it. Obj. It seems as if thinking was not essential to the soul, but rather a capacity of thinking under certain circumstances. For it doth not think, when it lies concealed in the primitive rudiment of the man, in the womb, perhaps in the beginnings of infancy, in sleep, in a swoon: and the reason of this seems to lie in the circumstances of the body, which either is not sufficiently extended, and prepared; or for a while employs the spirits wholly in the digestion of its aliment, and other offices in the animalconomy; or by some external attack, or the working of some enemy got into it, hath its parts disordered, and the passages so possessed, that the blood and other fluids can scarce break through; or after some such manner is preternaturally affected. And therefore the question to be resolved is not, whether the soul is material or immaterial; and much less, whether it will be annihilated at death; but, whether that soul (be it what it will), which ceases to think, when the body is not fitly disposed,

---

* Lucretius seems to be aware of this. **Jam triplex animi e? natura reperta: Nec tamen hoc satusat adfensam virtutem creanda &c. Quarta quoq; hisigitur quodam natura necesse est Attribuatenum; en est omnino nominis express.
Truths belonging to a Private Man, &c. 195

can think at all, when the body is quite dissolved, and leaves the soul no opportunity of acting it any more, or operating by it. *Ans.* If this objection cannot be fully answered, till we know more of the nature of spiritual beings, and of that vinculum, by which the soul and body are connected, than we do at present, it must not therefore be looked upon as certainly unanswerable in itself; and much less, if only it cannot be answered by me. It may perhaps be possible to turn it even into an argument for the immortality of the soul.

The soul it cannot be denied is a limited being, or a being, which acts under limitations: these limitations at different times are different, its activity and faculties being more obstructed or clogged at one time than another, and most of all in sleep, or a deliquium: as these obstructions are removed, it acts more clearly and freely; and therefore if the state of the soul in the body (its confinement there) may be considered as one general and great limitation, why, when this limitation shall be taken off (this great obstruction removed), may it not be allowed to act with still greater freedom and clearness; the greatest it is capable of? Whilst it remains in the brain, it can as it were look out at a few apertures; that is, receive the notice of many things by those nerves and organs, which are the instruments of sensation: but if any of those avenues to it be closed, that branch of its knowledge is for a time cut off. If those tracks in the brain, or those marks, whatever they are, and where ever they are imprinted, upon which our memory and images of things seem to depend, are filled up or overcast by any vapor, or otherwise darkened, it can read them no more, till the cloud is dispersed. (For it cannot read what is not legible, and indeed for the present not there.) And since even in abstracted reflections the mind is obliged to make use of words, or some kind of signs, to fix its ideas, and to render them tractable and stable enough to be pursued, compared, &c. and this kind of language depends upon memory, whilst this is intermitted, the use of the other is taken away, with all that depends upon it. This is the present state of the soul: and from hence the reason appears in some measure, why we do not think in sound sleep, &c. but it does not follow from hence, that the soul cannot subsist and act under more enlarged circumstances. That, which, being confined to the body, and able to act only according to the opportunities

---

*a* If Lucan by sensus means all manner of apprehension and knowledge, there is no room for that disjunction: Aut nihil est sensus animis a morte relatum, Aut mors ipsa nihil. For if the former part be true, the other will follow. 
b Velut è distincto carcere emittus [animus]. Sen. 
c Those kinds of animals, which do not speak, do not reason: but those, which do the one, do the other. Therefore רָאָה שָׁלוֹם (or Arab. ṣawāḥ) is a rational animal: and אֱלֹהֵי signifies both speak and reason, as going together.
opportunities this affords, can now perceive visible objects only with two eyes (at two windows), because there are no more, might doubtless see with four, if there were so many properly placed and disposed; or if its habitation were all eye (window all round), might see all round. And so, in general, that, which now can know many things by the impressions made at the ends of the nerves, or by the intervention of our present organs, and in this situation and inclosure can know them no other way, may for all that, when it comes to be loosed out of that prison, know them immediately, or by some other medium. That, which is now forced to make shift with words and signs of things in its reasonings, may, when it shall be set at liberty and can come at them, reason upon the intuition of things themselves, or use a language more spiritual or ideal. I say, it is not impossible, that this should be the case; and therefore no one can say, with reason, that it is not: especially, since we find by experience, that the soul is limited; that the limitations are variable; that we know not enough of the nature of spirit to determine, how these limitations are effected: and therefore cannot tell, how far they may be carried on, or taken off. This suffices to remove the force of the objection. But further,

A man, when he wakes, or comes to himself (which phrase implies what I am going to say), immediately knows this, and knows himself to be the same soul that he was before his sleep, or fainting away. I will suppose, that he is also conscious to himself, that in those intervals he thought not at all (which is the same the objector must suppose): that is, if his body had been cut to pieces, or mouldered to dust, he could not have thought less: for there is no thinking less than thinking not at all. From hence then I gather, that the soul preserves a capacity of thinking, &c. under those circumstances and indispositions of the body, in which it thinks no more, than if the body was destroyed; and that therefore it may, and will preserve it, when the body is destroyed. And if so, what can this capacity be preferred for? Certainly not, that it may never be exerted. The Author of nature doth not use to act after that manner. So that here is this dilemma to be opposed to the objection. In sleep and swoonings the soul doth either think, or not. If it does, the objection has no foundation: and if it doth not, then all that will follow, which I have just now said.

If we should suppose the soul to be a being by nature made to inform some body, and that it cannot exist and act in a state of total separation from all body; it would not follow from hence, that what we call death, must therefore reduce it
Truths belonging to a Private Man, &c. 197

to a state of absolute insensibility and inactivity; which to it would be equal to
non-existence. For that body, which is so necessary to it, may be some fine ve-

cicle, that dwells with it in the brain (according to that hypothesis p. 193.) and
goest off with it at death. Neither the answers to the objection, nor the case
after death will be much altered by such a supposition. And since I confess I see
no absurdity in it; I will try to explain it a little further. We are sensible of
many material impressions (impressions made upon us by material causes, or bo-
dies): that there are such we are sure. Therefore there must be some matter
within us, which being moved or pressed upon, the soul apprehends it immedi-
ately. And therefore, again, there must be some matter to which it is immedi-
ately and intimately united, and related in such a manner, as it is not related to any
other. Let us now suppose this said matter to be some refined and spirituous
vehicle *, which the soul doth immediately inform, with which it sympathizes;
by which it acts, and is acted upon; and to which it is vitally and inseparably
united: and that this animated vehicle has its abode in the brain, among the heads
and beginnings of the nerves. Suppose we also, that when any impressions are
made upon the organs or parts of the body, the effects of them are carried by
the nerves up to their fountain, and the place, where the soul in its vehicle is;
and there they communicate their several motions or tremors to this material ve-
cicle (or by their motions, or tendency to motion, press upon it); so that the soul,
which inhabits it in a peculiar manner, and is thoroughly possessed of it, shall be
apprehensive of these motions or pressures: and moreover, that this vehicle so
guarded and incompassed by the body as it is, can be come at or moved by exter-
nal objects no other way, but by the mediation of the nerves; nor the soul, by
consequence, have any direct intelligence concerning them, or correspondence
with them, in any other way. And as we suppose the soul to receive notises of things
from without in this manner, so let us suppose, on the other side, that by mov-
ing its own vehicle it may produce motion in the contiguous spirits and nerves,

* So Hierocles distinguishes τὸ ἀνγέλου ἡμῶν σῶμα, αὐτὸ ὁ ψυχῶν ἀπότροπος θώρακας, from that, which
he calls τὸ Σώμα ἡμῶν σῶμα, and to which the former communicates life. Τὸ ἀνγέλου ἡμῶν σῶ-
ματι προσφέρει σώματα Σώματος σ. Id. This fine body he calls also ψυχικός σῶμα, and πνευματικὸς θώρακας.
In Nism, khai, there is much concerning that fine body, in which the soul is clothed, and from
which it is never to be separated, according to an old tradition. Men. b. 1fr. gives us the sum of it
in such words as these: γὰρ τὸ κατὰ Θεόν ἐματία μεταλλόντος ψυχών, ρημαίοια, ὑπέρ τοῦ κατὰ Θεόν
καταφθάνοντος, καὶ βαρείως εἰς τὸν θανόν καταδίωκοντος, καὶ τοῖς θρόνοις ἐπιστρέφειν, καὶ ὑπὲρ τοῦς θο-
νομάρχους ἐπὶ τὸν θανόν κατάδόσας, καὶ τοῖς δικαίως ἀπολαύσας, καὶ τοῖς θρόνοις ἐπιστρέφειν
τὸ κατὰ Θεόν ἐματία μεταλλόντος ψυχών, καὶ τοῖς βαρείως εἰς τὸν θανόν καταδίωκοντος, καὶ τοῖς
θρόνοις ἐπιστρέφειν, καὶ τοῖς δικαίως ἀπολαύσας. Σανδίας long before him joins to the soul
κατὰ Θεόν ἐματία μεταλλόντος ψυχήν, &c.
and so move the body: I mean, when nothing renders them unfit to be moved. Let us suppose further, that the soul by means of this vehicle feels or finds those prints and portraits, or those effects and remains left by objects on the mind in some manner or other, which cause the remembrance of words and things: I mean again, when they are not filled up, or obscured by any thing; or, when there are any such to be felt. And lastly, let us suppose, that if the soul in its more abstraced and purer reasonings, or more spiritual acts, has any occasion for matter, to serve it, the matter of this vehicle is that which is always with it, and serves it. All which it is easy to understand, and perhaps not very difficult to suppose. On the contrary, by many symptoms it appears most probable, that that matter, to which the mind is immediately present, and in which is its true fbeckinab, is not the whole gross body, but some subtile body, placed (as I have said) in the region of the brain. For there all the conveyances of sensible species conspire to meet, and there in reflexion we find our selves: when a limb is lost, the soul, tis true, loses an opportunity of receiving intelligence from or by it, and of using it, but perceives no loss in itself: and tho the body, many parts of it at least, are in a perpetual flux and continually altering, yet I know that the substance, which thinks within me now (or rather, which is I), is, notwithstanding all the changes my body has undergone, the very same which thought above fifty years ago, and ever since; when I playd in such a field, went to such a school, was of such a university, performed such and such exercises, &c. If you would permit me to use a school term, I would lay the egoity b remains. Now to answer the objection, and apply all this to our purpose. Why do we not perceive external objects in our sleep, or a swoon? Because the passages are become impracticable, the windows shut, and the nerves, being obstructed, or some how rendered for the time useless, can transmit no information to it. Why however does it not reason and think about something or other? Because, all the marks by which things are remembered being for the present choked up or disordered, the remembrance of those objects, about which it is wont to employ itself, and even of the words (or other signs), in which it uses to reason, and to preserve the deductions and conclusions it makes, is all suspended and lost for the time; and so its tables being covered, its books closed, and its tools locked up, the requisites for reasoning are wanting, and no subject offers itself, to exercise its thoughts, it having yet had little or no opportunity to

---

* Cium corpora quotidie nostra fluent, & aut crescent aut decrecent, ergo tot erimus homines; quot quotidie commutamus? aut alius sui, cium decem annorum esset; alius, cium triginta; alius cium quinquaginta, alius, cium jam tunc cano capitae jam? S. Hier. So it must be, if our souls are nothing different from our bodies.

* Tully has Lenthalitas and Appias; in the same form, tho not just the like sense.
Truths belonging to a Private Man, &c. 199

take in higher objects and more refined matter for contemplation. And to conclude, if it be demanded, why any one should imagin, that the soul may think, perceive, act after death, when it doth not do this in sleep, &c. the answer is; because those inclosures and impediments, which occasioned the formentioned intermissions, and those great limitations under which it labors at all times, will be removed with its inlargement out of the body. When it shall in its proper vehicle be let go, and take its flight into the open fields of heaven, it will then be bare to the immediate impressions of objects: and why should not those impressions, which affected the nerves that moved and affected the vehicle and soul in it, affect the vehicle immediately, when they are immediately made upon it, without the interposition of the nerves? The hand, which feels an object at the end of a staff, may certainly be allow'd to feel the same much better by immediate contact, without the staff. Nay, why should we not think, that it may admit of more objects and the knowledge of more things, than it can now; since being exposed all round to the influences of them, it may be moved not only by visible objects just at the extremities of the optic nerves, by sounds at the ends of the auditory, &c. but become as it were all eye to visible objects, all ear to audible, and so on? And why should we not think this the rather, because then the soul may be also perceptive of finer impressions and ethereal contacts, and consequently of more kinds of objects, such as we are now incapable of knowing? And then, this being so, why should we not presage, that other endowments, as faculties of reasoning, communicating thoughts, and the like, will be proportionable to such noble opportunities of knowledge? There seems to be nothing in this account impossible; and therefore nothing, but what may be.

If we do but attend, we must see every where, that many things are by ways, which we do not, nor can understand; and therefore we must be convinced, even from hence, that more may be; and therefore that the objection before us, tho' we could not falsify the difficulties in it, and what is supposed here should be all rejected as chimerical, yet ought to be no prejudice against the belief of the immortality of the soul, if there is any (but one) good reason for it.

But if we can in any tolerable manner (which in our present circumstances is as much, as can be expected) account for the difficulties objected, and those the greatest belonging to this matter, and shew how it is possible that they may consist with immortality, this will greatly corroborate the arguments for it, if not be one itself. This I hope is done: or if I have not spoke directly to every part of the objection, from what has been done that defect may easily be supplied.

4. We may conclude the souls of men to be immortal from the nature of God. For if he is (which sure no body doubts) a Perfect being, He, as such, can do no-
thing inconsistent with perfect or right reason. And then no being, nor circumstance of any being, can come from Him as its cause, which it is not agreeable to such reason should be: or (which is the same), He cannot but deal reasonably with all His dependents. And then again, if we are in the number of these, and the mortality of the human soul does not consist with reason, we may be sure it is immortal: as sure as we can be of any thing by the use of our faculties; and that is, as sure as we can be of any thing. Whether therefore that doth consist with reason, or not, is to be inquired.

To produce a being into a state of clear happiness, in any degree, can be no injury to it; or into a state of mixt happiness, provided the happiness certainly over-balances the contrary, and the unhappy or suffering part be not greater than what that being would choose in order to obtain the happiness, or rather than lose it. Nor, again, can any wrong be done by producing a being subject to more misery than happiness, if that being hath it in his own power to avoid the misery, or so much of it, as may leave the remainder of misery not greater, than what he would rather sustain than miss the proportion of happiness. The only case then, by which wrong can be done in the production of any being, is, when it is necessarily and irremediably to be miserable, without any recompense, or balance of that misery: and this indeed is a case so grievous, so utterly irreconcilable to all reason, that the heart of a reasoning and considering man can scarce bear the thought of it. So much every one must understand of the nature of reason and justice as to allow these things for truths incontestable.

Now then he, who says the soul of man is mortal, must say one of these two things: either that God is an unreasonable, unjust, cruel Being; or that no man in respect of this life (which according to him is all), has a greater share of misery, unavoidable, than of happiness. To say the former is to contradict that, which I presume has been proved beyond contradiction. To which I may add here, that this is to avow such an unworthy, impious notion of the Supreme being, as one would not entertain without caution even of the worst of men; such a one, as even the person himself, who says this, must know to be false. For he cannot but see, and must own many instances of the reasonableness and beneficence of the Deity: not one of which could be, if cruelty and unreasonableness were His inclination; since He has power to execute His own inclinations thoroughly, and is a Being uniform in his nature. Then to say the latter is to contradict the whole story of mankind, and even one's own senses.

* That passage in S. Iqar. imports much the same thing, that has been said here:
Consider the dreadful effects of many wars, and all those barbarous desolations, which we read of: what cruel tyrants there are, and have been in the world, who (at least in their fits) divert themselves with the pangs and convulsions of their fellow-creatures: what slavery is, and how men have been brought into that lamentable state: how many have been ruined by accidents unforeseen: how many have suffered or been undone by unjust laws, judges, witnesses, &c. how many have brought incurable diseases, or the causes of them, and of great torments, into the world with them: how many more, such bodily infirmities and disadvantages, as have rendered their whole lives uneasy: how many are born to no other inheritance but invincible poverty and trouble? Instances are endless: but, for a little taste of the condition of mankind here, reflect upon that story related by Strabo (from Polybius) and Plutarch, where, even by order of the Roman senate, P. Aemilius, one of the best of them too, at one prefixed hour sacked and destroyed seventy cities, unawares, and drove fifteen myriads of innocent persons into captivity; to be sold, only to raise pay for the merciless soldiers and their own executioners. Peruse that account of the gold-works in the confines of Egypt given by Diodorus: and think over the circumstances of the unfortunate laborers there, who were not only criminals, or men taken in war, but even such as calumny, or unjust power had doom'd (perhaps for being too good) to that place of torment; many times with all their relations.

* C. Cæsar —— Senatores et Equites —— ecidit, torris, non questioniis, sed animi causi. Deinde quosdam ex illis —— ad lucernam decollabat. —— Torserat per omnia, qua in rerum natura tristiissima sunt, fidiculis, &c. Sen. Homo, sacrates, jam per lucum et jocum occiditur. Id. b Slaves were reckoned among beasts of old. "Оντε ὑμεῖς πάνιν, ὡςοι καὶ μηθείς σοι;" ἰ. Εὐριπ. And sometimes as mere instruments and tools. "Ο τοι ὕλος ἑκάστου ἐγγένον το ὁ ἐγγένον ἐκάστου ἄλοι. Αριστ." Their sad condition I will set down in Plato's words. "Οντα άνθρωπος τότε γ' εἰσὶν το πάθημα, το ἀθανάτω ἅμα ἀνθρώπω πολίς, ἃ τινίτων τετιθεμένω εἰν ἡ ζωή ὡς ἀθανάτων ὡς προπληκτικῶν, ἂν ἑκάτε ἐκάτον ἄλοι μεταβείν, μνημὲ ἄλοι ἢ ἃ περίποται. " Those ἄρρητοι ἔκτισι νομίζω, which the τελεορνικ had brought upon the cities of Asia, are too many to be transcribed: but some account of them is to be seen in Plut. v. Luc. which may serve for one instance out of thousands. It may be reckoned madness indeed, maximas virtutes, quas gravissima delicata, punire; as Val. M. says, speaking of Phocion's cafe: but such madness has been very common, and men have suffered even for their virtue. Ochus cruelly put to death, Ocham fororem—, ἔπειραν cum centum amplius filius ac nepotibus—, nulla injuria lascivias, sed quod in maximam apud Persas probitatis et fortiiidinis laudem confiderre videbat. Id. And Seneca having recommended the example of Gracianus Julius (Julius Gracianus, ep. Tacit. the father of Julius Agricola), adds, quem C. Cæsar occidit ob hoc unum, quod melior vir erat, quam esse quemquam tyranno expeditor.
and poor children*. Or, once for all, take a view of servitude, as it is described by Pignorius. To pass over the Sicilian tyrants, him of Phere, Apollodorus b, and the like, of which history supplies plenty; consider those terrible proscriptions among the Romans c, with the reigns of most of their emperors, more bloody than Lybic lion, or Hyrcanian tiger, even some of the Christian emperors not excepted. Read the direful and unjust executions reported by Amm. Marcellinus: among hundreds of others that of Eusebius d. Every whisper in those times or light suspicion brought upon men the question and tortures inconceivable. Men's very dreams were once interpreted to be treason; and they durst scarce own, that they had ever slept e. What inhuman punishments were used among the Persians f, in an arbitrary manner too; and many times extended to whole families, and all the kindred, tho not concerned g? But instead of enumerating here burnings, crucifixions, breakings upon the wheel, impalings, &c. I choose to refer you to those authors, who have designably treated of the torments and questions of the ancients. Look into the history of the Christian Church, and her martyrologies: examin the prisons of the inquisition, the groans of which those walls are conscious, and upon what flight occasions men are racked and tortured by the tormentors there: and, to finish this detail (hideous indeed, but too true) as fast as I can, consider the many massacres, persecutions, and miseries consequent upon them, which false religion has caused, authorized, sanctified. Indeed the history of mankind is little else but the history of uncomfortable, dreadful passages: and a great part of it, however things are palliated and gilded over, is scarcely to be red by a good natured man without amazement, horror, tears. One can scarce look into a news-paper, or out at his window, but hardships and sufferings present themselves, in one shape or other. Now among all those millions, who have suffered eminently, can it be imagind, that there have not been multitudes, whose griefs and pangs have far outweigh all their injoyments; and yet who have not been able, either by their innocence, their

---

a Of ἠδίκους διαβασάμενος περιπτώντες, καὶ δὲ Θυμόν ἐμίς φυλακείς παραδοθηκῶν, πετοὶ μὴ ἄντως, πετοὶ ἥν μὴ παθὰ πάνω συγκλονέως.
b Mentioned by Cicero with Phalaris. He was tyrant of Casmundia, and is represented (out of Polyannus) as θνικώτατΟς & ὄμοιος πάτων, ὕπον τὰς ἐκσυνάρειν παῖς Βαρθολουπὸς πρὸς ἐκφέρων. Yet Ælian says, 'Ex τῶν ἰποκαλλιγήμων & ἰποκαλλίγεις, ἵππον θυσίαν θύλις, κ.κ.
c It is said of Sylla's peace, after Marius's party were broken, Pax cum bello de crudelitate certavit, &c.
d c Vìta est evisceratus, ut cruciantibus membra decisset, implorans caló justitiam, territi rendens fundato pēctore manūsc immobili, &c. In the reign of Constantius.
e Marebantique doth quidam, quid apud Atlanticos nati non essent, ubi memorantur formia non videri.

---

f V. Plut. in v. Aesox.
g Ob noctem unius annis propinquitas perit. Amm. Marc.
prudence, or any power in them, to escape that bitter draught, which they have drunk? And then, how can we acquit the justice and reasonableness of that Being, upon whom these poor creatures depend, and who leaves them such great losers by their existence, if there be no future state, where the proper amends may be made? So that the argument is brought to this undeniable issue; if the soul of man is not immortal, either there is no God, upon whom we depend; or He is an unreasonable Being; or there never has been any man, whose sufferings in this world have exceeded his enjoyments, without his being the cause of it himself. But surely no one of these three things can be said. Ergo ---.

That, which aggravates the hard case of the poor sufferers mentioned above, if there be no future state, in which their past sufferings may be brought into the account, and recompened, is, that many times their persecutors and tormentors pass their lives in plenty and grandeur: that is, the innocent have not only the portion, that properly belongs to the criminal and unreasonable part of mankind, but the guilty have that, which belongs rather to the innocent. Such a transposition of rewards and punishments, ending in itself, without any respect to something which is to follow hereafter, can never consist with the nature of a Governor, who is not very much below rational: a thought, which God forbid any one should dare to admit of Him. To suppose the virtuous and wise left ultimately but in the same state with the unjust and profligate is to suppose such a constitution of nature, as never can flow from a principle of reason, a God of truth and equity: and therefore such a constitution, as leaves the former in a worse condition than the other, can much less be supposed.

Obj. It hath been said, that virtue tends to make men's lives happy even here, &c. and how then can the virtuous be supposed ever to be so very miserable? Ans. In ordinary cases virtue doth produce happiness: at least it has indeed a natural tendency to it; is the mean, by which it is most likely to be attained; and is therefore the way, which a wise man would choose for his own sake. But then it doth not follow from hence, that there are no perturbations in human affairs; no cases, in which the usual effect of virtue may be overpowered by diseases, violence, distressers. It doth not render men invulnerable; cannot command the seasons; nor prevent many great calamities, under which virtue and vice must fall indistinguishably. (There may be a direct road to a place, and such a one, as he, who sets out for that place, ought to be found in, and yet it is possible he may meet with robbers or accidents in it, that may incommode, or hurt him in his journey.) On the other side, vice and wickedness may be so

* Dies deficiet, fi velim numerare, quibus bonis male evenerit: nec minus, fi commemorem, quibus improbis optimè. Cic. This is justly said; tho I account his instances not the most apposite.
204. The Religion of Nature. Sect. IX.

circumstantiated as to be attended with much greater pleasure than pain, contrary to the tendency of its nature: that is, a wicked man may be of a healthful make, born to riches or power, or fortunately placed for attaining them; and from the advantage of a strong body, an ample fortune, many friends, or lucky hits, he may derive pleasures, which shall exceed the present inconveniences and sufferings naturally following from his vices.

Men's circumstances have a natural influence with respect to the present pleasures or sufferings, as well as their virtue or vice. No body sure ever said, that all depends only upon these: nor, when the natural tendency of them is asserted, is the natural tendency or effect of the other denied. Therefore indeed, when it is said that virtue naturally tends to make men happy even here, the meaning only is, that it tends to make men happy in proportion to their circumstances; and vice does the contrary. It is naturally productive of that part of happiness, which is in our own power, and depends upon our selves; makes men more truly happy, whatever their circumstances are, than they could be without it, and commonly tends to mend their worldly circumstances too: but it is not asserted, that virtue can always entirely correct them, or make men so completely happy in this life, as that their enjoyments shall exceed their mortifications, no more than the vices of some particular men, tho they bereave them of many solid pleasures, and bring troubles upon them too, do hinder their worldly enjoyments from being greater than their present sufferings. Not only our being, but our place, with the time, and manner of our being in this world depend upon the Author of the scheme, the manner of behaving our selves in our station (according to our endowments, and the talents we have) only depends upon us. And perhaps (which has been hinted already) He has so ordered things on purpose, that from the various compositions of men's circumstances with the natural effects of their virtues and vices, and the many inequalities arising thence, they might see the necessity and certainty of another state: and that for this reason there should always be some remarkable instances of oppressing innocence and flourishing wickedness.

The upshot is, that upon comparing those pleasures, which are the natural effects of virtue with those sufferings, which are the natural effects of ill constitution or other calamity, those are many, very many times found to exceed: and it seems, upon balancing those evils, which are the genuine effects of vice, against the

* Yet according to Aristotle he cannot be happy for all that. His opinion Diog. L. represents thus: ἂν οὖν ἄριστον μὴ ἔχεις ἀρετήν πρὸς ἀνθρώπων περιπλανώμενον προκαλέσας ὅτι οὐκ ἔχεις ἱστοβίαν οὐδενὶ ἀνείρῳ διὸ καλονομίαν, καὶ ὅτι μόλις πατημένης ἀντὶ τοῦ ἐπαθείναι οὐ τι ἐξελέσθω.
advantages resulting from a fortunate estate, these may often be found to outdo the other. Both contrary to reason, if all ends with this life, and after death be nothing. For my part, if there were only some few, nay but one instance of each kind in the world (unfortunate virtue, and prosperous wickedness), it would be to me a sufficient argument for a future state: because God cannot be unjust or unreasonable in any one instance. It must not be forgot here, that many times men of great vices have also great virtues, and the natural effect of these may qualify that of the other, and being added to their favourable circumstances may help to turn the scale.

If there is no other beside the present being, the general and usual state of mankind is scarce consistent with the idea of a reasonable Cause. Let us consider it a little. Not to mention what we must suffer from the very settlement and condition of this world by hunger, thirst, heat, cold, and indispositions; like leaves one generation drops, and another springs up, to fall again, and be forgotten. As we come into the world with the labor of our mothers, we soon go out of it with our own. Childhood and youth are much of them lost in insensibility or trifling, vanity and rudeness; obnoxious to many pains and accidents; and, when they are spent in the best manner, are attended with labor and discipline. When we reach that stage of life, which usually takes us from our nearest relations, and brings us out into the world, with what difficulty are proper employments and stations found for us? When we are got out, and left to scramble for ourselves, how many hardships and tricks are put upon us, before we get the sagacity and dexterity to save ourselves? How many chances do we stand? How troublesome is business made by unreasonableness, ill nature, or trifling and want of punctuality in the persons with whom we deal? How do we find ourselves instantly surrounded with snares from designing men, knaves, enemies (of which the best men have some), opposite interests, factions, and many times from a mischievous breed, whole childish or diabolical humor seeks pleasure in the uneasiness of other people? Even in many of those enjoyments, which men principally propose to themselves, they are greatly disappointed, and experience shews, how unlike they are to the antecedent images of them. They are commonly mixed: the apparatus to most of them is too operose: the completion of them seldom depends upon ourselves.

---

Et valet annales nostrorum audire laborum. For, as Seneca says, Nulli contigie impune nasci. V'Onopter φύσεως τιμή, τοιχίς & ἀνθρώπιν. — — — ο ἐρὰ φύσι, η δ' ἀνθρώπιν. Hom. This is true not only of single men, but even of cities (famous ones), kingdoms, empires. One may say the same concerning many of them, that Florus says of Veii. Laborat annalium fides, ut Veiius fañife credamus. Labor voluptatis, diffimillima natura, societas quadam inter se naturali sunt juncta. Liv. alone,
alone, but upon a concurrence of things, which rarely hit all right: they are generally not only less in practice, than in theory, but die almost as soon as they are: and perhaps they intail upon us a tax to be paid after they are gone. To go on with the history of human life: tho affairs go prosperously, yet still perhaps a family is increasing, and with it new occasions of solicitude are introduced, accompanied with many fears and tender apprehensions. At length, if a man, through many cares and toils and various adventures, arrives at old age, then he feels most commonly his pressures rather increased, than diminished, and himself less able to support them. The business he has to do grows urgent upon him, and calls for dispatch: most of his faculties and active powers begin now to fail him apace: relations and friends, who might be helpful to him (and among them perhaps the dear Confort of all his joys, and all his cares) leave him, never to return more: wants and pains all the while are multiplying upon him: and under this additional load he comes melancholy behind, tottering, and bending toward the earth; till he either stumbles upon something which throws him into the grave, or fainting falls of himself. And must he end here? Is this the period of his being? Is this all? Did he come into the world only to make his way through the press, amidst many joustings and hard struggles, without only a few deceitful, little, fugacious pleasures interspersed, and to go out of it again? Can this be an end worthy a first Cause perfectly reasonable? Would even any man, of common sense and good nature, send another upon a difficult journey, in which, tho he might perhaps now and then meet with a little smooth way, get an interval for rest and contemplation, or be flatter'd with some verdures and the smiles of a few daisies on the banks of the road; yet upon the whole he must travel through much dirt, take many wearisome steps, be continually inquiring after some clue or directions to carry him through the turnings and intricacies of it, be puzzled how to get a competent viaticum and pay his reckonings, ever and anon be in danger of being lost in deep waters, and beside forced all the while to fence against weather, accidents, and cruel robbers, who are every where lying in wait for him: I say, would any one send a man upon such a journey as this, only that the man might faint and expire at the end of it, and all his thoughts perish; that is, either for no end at all, or for the punishment of one, whom I suppose never to have hurt him, nor ever to have been capable.

---

a Sensible of this, Socrates used to say, δι' τις ήδινες, μη ταφ' ύμας, ἢδινα ταφ' ἢμών Σοφ. Στόβ.  
Senex, & leviffimis quoque curis impar: as Seneca, of himself, in Tac.  
^c Rogen aspiciendus amata Conjugis, &c. Juv.  
^d Ἐρίχεα παλαιὰ σύμματ' ἤνα κυρίον ἤκο. Soph.
of hurting him? And now can we impute to God that, which is below the common size of men? a

I am apt to think, that even among those, whose state is beheld with envy, there are many, who, if at the end of their course they were put to their option, whether, without any respect to a future state, they would repeat all the pleasures they have had in life, upon condition to go over again also all the same disappointments, the same vexations and unkind treatments from the world, the same secret pangs and tedious hours, the same labors of body and mind, the same pains and sicknesses, would be far from accepting them at that price b.

But here the case, as I have put it, only respects them, who may be reckond among the more fortunate passengers: and for one, that makes his voyage so well, thousands are tost in tempefts, and lost c. How many never attain any comfortable settlement in the world? How many fail, after they have attaind it, by various misfortunes? What melancholy, what distractions are caused in families by inhumane or vitious husbands, false or peevish wives, refractory or unhappy children; and, if they are otherwise, if they are good, what sorrow by the loss of them? How many are forced by neceflity upon drudging and very shocking employments for a poor livelihood? How many subsist upon begging, borrowing, and other shifts, nor can do otherwise? How many meet with fad accidents, or fall into deplorable diseases? Are not all companies, and the very streets filled with complaints, and grievances, and doleful stories? I verily believe, that a great part of mankind may acribe their deaths to want and dejection. Seriously, the present state of mankind is unaccountable, if it has not some connexion with another, and be not as it were the porch or entry to it d.

There is one thing more, of which notice ought to be taken. To one, who carefully peruses the story and face of the world, what appears to prevail in it? Is it not corruption, vice, iniquity, folly at least? Are not debauching e, getting per fas aut nefas, defaming one another, erecting tyrannies of one kind or other,
propagating empty and senseless opinions with bawling and fury the great buff- 

nels of this world? And are not all these contrary to reason? Can any one then 

with reason imagine, that reason should be given, tho it were but to a few, only 

to be run down and trampled upon, and then extinguished? May we not rather 

conclude, that there must be some world, where reason will have its turn, and 

prevail and triumph? Some kingdom of reason to come?

5. In the last place, that great expectation, which men have, of continuing to 

live in another state, beyond the grave, has I suppose been commonly admitted as one 

proof, that they shall live; and does seem indeed to me to add some weight to 

what has been said. That they generally have had such an expectation, can scarce 

be denied. The histories of mankind, their deifications, rites, stories of apparitions, 

the frequent mention of a bades, with rewards and punishments hereafter, 

&c. all testify, that even the Heathen world believed, that the souls of men survi- 

ved their bodies. Their ignorance indeed of the facts and circumstances of the de-

parted has begot many errors and superstitions; and these have been multiplied by 

licentious poets and idle visionairs: but this, being no more than what is usual in 

the like cases, ought to be no prejudice against the fundamental opinion itself.

Cicero b, tho he owns there were different opinions among the Greek philo-

sophers about this matter; that, quod literis estet, Pherecydes Syrus primum dixit,

animos hominum esse sempiternos; that Pythagoras and his school confirmed this 

opinion; that Plato was the man, who brought a reason for it, &c. yet tells us plainly, 
naturam ipsam de immortalitate animorum tacitam judicare; that nescio 
quomodo inhaeret in mentibus quasi saeculorum quoddam augurium; that permanere 
animos arbitramur consensu nationum omnium; and more to this purpose. Now 

if this content was only the effect of some tradition, handed from parents to 

their children; yet since we meet with it in all the quarters of the world (where 

there is any civility or sense), and in all ages, it seems to be coeval to mankind 

itself, and born with it. And this is sufficient to give a great authority to this 
opinion of the soul's immortality. But this is not all. For it is supported by all 

the foregoing arguments, and many other reasonings and symptoms which we may 

find within ourselves. All which, put together, may at least justify an 

expectation of a future state: that is, render it a just or reasonable expectation; 

and then this reasonable expectation grows, by being such, into a further argu-

ment, that there will be such a state.

* Befide, there being no fatriety of knowledge in this life, we may hope for future opportunities, 

when our faculties shall be exalted, &c. 

† In Thec. disp. 

Fancy.
Fancy a man walking in some retired field, far from noise, and free from prejudice, to debate this matter with himself: and then judge, whether such meditations as these would not be just. "I think I may be sure, that neither lifeless matter, nor the vegetative tribe, that stone, that flower, that tree have any reflex thoughts: nor do the sensitive animals; that sheep, that ox, seem to have any such thing, or but in the lowest degree, and in respect of present objects only. They do not reason, nor discourse. I may therefore certainly pretend to be something much above all these things. I not only apprehend and consider these external objects acting at present upon my nerves, but have ideas raifed within my self of a higher order, and many: I can, not only represent to my self things, that are, or have been, but deduce many other from them, make excursions into futurity, and foresee much of what will be, or at least may be; by strict thinking I had almost said, get into another world beforehand: and, whether I shall live in some other state after death, or not, I am certainly a being capable of such an expectation, and cannot but be solicitous about it: none of which things can be said of these clods, or those brutes. Can I then be designd for nothing further, than just to eat, drink, sleep, walk about, and act upon this earth; that is, to have no further being, than what these brutes have, so far beneath me? Can I be made capable of such great expectations, which those animals know nothing of (happier by far in this regard than I am, if we must die alike), only to be disappointed at last? Thus placed, just upon the confines of another better world, and fed with hopes of penetrating into it, and enjoying it, only to make a short appearance here, and then to be shut out, and totally sunk? Must I then, when I bid my last farewell to these walks, when I close these lids, and yonder blue regions and all this scene darken upon me and go out, must I then only serve to furnish dust to be mingled with the ashes of these birds and plants, or with this dirt under my feet? Have I been set so far above them in life, only to be level with them at death?

This argument grows stronger in the apprehension of one, who is conscious of abilities and intellectual improvements, which he has had no opportunity here of shewing and using, through want of health, want of confidence, want of pro-

---

* Methinks those philosophers make but an odd appearance in story, who, looking big and fantastous, at the fame time professed, that their own souls were not superior to those of gnats, &c. οί τοις θρόσσοις ἀνθρώπινης μορφής πάντες τόν έκακον διαφέρουσαν ἀνθρώπινης μορφῆς τού έκακον, & ἡμῖν, — ης ουκές ζωής — τόν οίνον ουκόταν Φιλοσοφωτάτων ζωής, as Enseb.

[b] Alexander after death might be in the same state with his muleteer (M. Anton.), but sure not with his mule: brevis est hic frutulus hominil, may be justly said for all Lucretius.

[c] Brevis est hic frutulus hominil, may be justly said for all Lucretius.

The Religion of Nature. Sect. IX.

per place, want of liberty. Such improvements, and the knowledge consequent upon them, cannot ultimately respect this state: they can be only an enlargement, and preparation for another. That is all they can be: and if they are not that, they are nothing. And therefore he may be supposed thus, further, to argue within himself. "Can the Author of my reasoning faculties be Himself so unreasonable " as to give me them, either not to employ them, or only to weary myself with "useless pursuits, and then drop me? Can He, who is privy to all my circum-
stances, and to these very thoughts of mine, be so insensible of my case, as to " have no regard to it, and not provide for it?"

It grows stronger still upon the mind of one, who reflecting upon the hard treatment he has met with from this world, the little cause he has given for it, the pains and secret uneasiness he has felt upon that score, together with many other sufferings which it was not in his power to prevent, cannot but make a silent, humble appeal to that Being, who is his last and true refuge, and who he must believe will not desert him thus.

Lastly, it is strongest of all to one, who, besides all this, endeavours in the conduct of his life to observe the laws of reason (that is, of his nature; and that is, of the Author of nature, upon whom he depends); laments, and labors against his own infirmities; implores the Divine mercy; prays for some better state hereafter; acts and lives in the hopes of one; and denies himself many things upon that view: one, who by the exaltation of his reason and upper faculties, and that, which is certainly the effect of real and useful philosophy, the practice of virtue, is still approaching toward a higher manner of being, and doth already taste something spiritual and above this world. To such a one there must be a strong expectation indeed, and the argument built upon it must be proportionable. For can he be indowd with such capacities, and have as it were overtures of immortality made him, if after all there is no such thing? Must his private acts and concealed exercises of religion be all loft? Can a perfect Being have so little regard to one, who however inferior and nothing to Him, yet regards Him according to his best abilities in the government of himself?

Are such meditations and reflexions as these well founded, or not? If they are, it must be reasonable to think, that God will satisfy a reasonable expectation.

There are other arguments for the immortality of the soul, two of which I will leave with you, to be at your leisure pondered well. The one is, that, if the souls of men are mortal (extinguished at death), the case of brutes is by much preferable to that of men. The pleasures of brutes, tho but sensual, are more sincere, being
Truths belonging to a Private Man, &c. 211

palled or diminished by no diverting consideration: they go wholly into them; and when they have them not, they seem less to want them, not thinking of them. Their sufferings are attended with no reflection, but are such as they are said to be p. 34. obf. 8. They are void of cares; are under no apprehension for families and posterity; never fatigue themselves with vain inquiries, hunting after knowledge which must perish with them; are not anxious about their future state, nor can be disappointed of any hopes or expectations; and at last some sudden blow (or a few minutes of unforeseen pain) finishes them, having never so much as known that they were mortal.

The other is, that the soul is a principle of life: that, which brings vitality to the body. For how should that, which has been proved to be a substance, and at the same time is also a principle of life, and as such (as being what it is) is alive; I say, how can that die, unless it is annihilated?

Here I begin to be very sensible how much I want a guide. But as the religion of nature is my theme, I must at present content my self with that light which nature affords; my business being, as it seems, only to shew, what a Heathen philosopher, without any other help, and almost assuredly, may be supposed to think. I hope that neither the doing of this, nor any thing else contained in this Delineation, can be the least prejudice to any other true religion. Whatever is immediately revealed from God, must, as well as any thing else, be treated as being what it is: which cannot be, if it is not treated with the highest regard, believed and obeyed. That therefore, which has been so much insisted on by me, and is as it were the burden of my song, is so far from undermining true revealed religion, that it rather paves the way for its reception. This I take this opportunity to remark to you once for all. And so returning to my philosopher, I cannot imagin but that even be would have at least some such general thoughts as these, which make up almost the remainder of this last section.

* Vara pericula, quae vident, fugientes: cum offugere, secura sunt, &c. Sen.  
* Sic mihi perspexi, sic sentio, cum——semper agi est animus, nec principium motus habeat, quia se ipse movet; ne finem quidem habiturum esse motus, quia nunquam se ipse sit reliquit. Cic. That in Greg. Thalm. is like this thought of Tully: 'H, ψυχη, αυτοκινετος ηαμ, άδιπτως & ίναι διαιλαλη μολεσθη& το ιν- 
τοκινητη το αι κινητο λιγαι το ειδων κινητο γαρ ιει, κλ. But that in S. Austin comes something nearer to my meaning: 'Est animus vita quaedam, unde omne quod animatum est vivit.——Non ergo 
poeto animus morti. Nam si carere poterit vita, non animus sed animatum aliquid est.'

IX. The
IX. The soul, when it parts from this gross body, will pass by some law into some new seat, or state, agreeable to the nature of it. Every species of beings must belong to some region, or state. Because nothing can be, but it must be some where, and some how: and there being different kinds of abodes and manners of subsisting in the universe, and the natures of the things, that are to exist in them, being also different, there will be a greater congruity between these several natures respectively and some particular places, or states, than there is between them and others; and indeed such a one, that out of those perhaps they cannot subsist, or not naturally. To those therefore must be their respective tendencies: to those they are adjudged by the course of nature, and constitution of things, or rather by the Author of them.

While the soul is in the body, it has some powers and opportunities of moving it spontaneously, or otherwise than it would be moved by the mere laws of gravitation and mechanism. This is evident. But yet, notwithstanding this, the weight of that body, to which at present it is limited (among other causes) constrains it to act for a while upon this stage. That general law, to which bodies are subjected, makes it sink in this fluid of air, so much lighter than itself; keeps it down; and so determines the seat of it, and of the soul in it, to be upon the surface of this earth, where, or in whose neighbourhood it was first produced. But then, when the soul shall be disengaged from the gross matter, which now incloses and incumbers it, and either become naked spirit, or be only veild in its own fine and obsequious vehicle, it must at the same time be either freed from the laws of bodies, and fall under some other, which will carry it to some proper mansion, or state; or at least by the old ones be capable of mounting upwards, in proportion to the volatility of its vehicle, and of emerging out of these regions into some medium more suitable, and (if the philosopher may say so) equilibrious. Thus much as to the general state of souls after death. But then,

The transmigratin of souls has been much talked of: but ea santonin,—quoniam ridicula, & c. miimo dignior quam schola, ne refelli quidem servi debet; quod qui facit, videatur vereri, ne quis id creeret. So Laclantius. Indeed who can but laugh, when he reads in Lucian of Homer's having been a camel in Bactria, & c.

b Χαριμὸν ἐκ τοῦ ὄμοιον πρὸς τὸ ὄμοιον. Hierol. c Ex humili atque depressō in eum emicabit locum, quisquis illē esset, qui solutum vinculis animas beatas recipit sīm. Sen. H εἴ τινες præspeclémque opulēs, & τὰ αρετῶν, ὄνων πτερών τών, ἐκφυσίς πρὸς τὸ καλὸν κα-

sarōν τόσον, τις τῶν ἕτων ἑυζωνικῶν ἕρμας ἐνδύεται. Hierol. d Deposīta sacrinā, levior vobabit ad calum. S. Hier.

X. In
X. In this new state, or place of abode, there may be different stations befitting the differences of particular souls among themselves, as they are more or less perfect in their kind. We see even inanimate bodies, which have different gravities, figures, impulses, &c. settle into some order among themselves, agreeable to these differences. And so by the same universal rule in nature (viz. that differences in things are attended with answerable relations and effects) souls must also take their situation in some kind of order according to their differences.

XI. The great difference of human souls, with respect to perfection and imperfection, lies in their different degrees and habits of reasonableness or unreasonableness. That is to say, not only in men’s different improvements, or neglects and abuse of their rational faculties; but also in the greater or less influence of these upon their actions, and by consequence in their different degrees of virtue, or vice. For a man is accounted a reasonable man, when he reasons rightly, and follows his reason: in which expression virtue must be included, being (as p. 179, & al.) nothing but the practice of reason and truth.

That men are reasonable, or the contrary, in different degrees is plain. Some reason well upon some subjects, but in respect of others, to which they have not been accusmom, are dim and confused: or they are partial to their vices and passions, their old impressions and parties; and so their reason is not general, nor has its due extent, or influence. Others, whose reason is uncultivated and weak, tho they have virtuous inclinations, many times fall into superstition and absurdities; misled by authorities, and over-awed by old or formal modes of speaking, and grave nonsense. Many, if not the most, seem to have scarce any notion of reason or virtue at all, but act fortuitously, or as they see other folks act; moved either by bodily propensions, or by example. Some few there are, who endeavour to improve their understandings, to discover what is agreeable to reason, and to fix their opinions; and conduct their lives accordingly. And in all these several kinds there are various degrees of elevation in knowledge and virtue, and of immersion in vice and ignorance, and new differences arising endlesly. All this is visible.

• The Jews, who generally say, that by the practice of religion the soul acquires perfection and life eternal, lay such a stress upon habits of piety, that R. Albo makes the effect of giving 1000 zuz in charity at once by no means equal to that of giving one zuz and repeating it 1000 times.

Now
Now the soul, reflecting, finds in itself two general faculties, one, by which it understands, and judges, and reasons (all which I comprehend under the term rational faculties, or reason); and another, by which it wills, or determines to act, according to the judgments and conclusions made in the upper part of it. And the more perfectly it performs these operations (i.e. the more truly it reasons, and the more readily it wills and executes the decisions of reason), the more perfectly certainly it must be in its kind; and the more imperfectly, the more imperfect. The accomplishments therefore and perfections of human souls, and the contrary, must be in proportion to the forementioned differences.

XII. According to these differences then it is reasonable to think the souls of men will find their stations in the future world. This is but a corollary from what goes before. Obj. Why should we think, that God causes things to be in such a manner, as that in the future state men shall be placed and treated according to their merit, and the progress they have made in reason and virtue, when we see the case to be widely different in this? Ans. It must be remembered, that this is one of those very reasons on which the belief of the soul’s immortality is founded. Now, if it be reasonable to believe there is a future state, because things are dealt unequally now, upon that very score it will be reasonable to think, that they are dealt equally in that other state.

Here bodily wants and affections, and such things as proceed from them, do intermix with human affairs, and do confound merit with demerit, knowledge with ignorance: and hence it comes to pass many times, that bad men injoy much, and good men suffer, and both are, if there is no other state, in their wrong places. But, when the corporeal causes of misplacing shall be removed, spirits (or spirits and their σώματα and πνεύματα) may be supposed more regularly to take their due posts and privileges: the impudent and vitious will have no such opportunities of getting into circumstances, of which they are unworthy, nor improved and virtuous minds find such obstructions to keep them down in circumstances unworthy of them. Be sure the more advanced and pure any state is, the more properly will the inhabitants be ranked, and the jufter and more natural will the subordination of its members be.

Even here we commonly find men in that kind of business, for which they are educated and prepared; men of the same professions generally keeping together; the virtuous and reasonable desiring to be (tho they not always can be) with their like:  

---

* Τοις προσόντοις τῷ ἐστὶν. Plato.  
* b With an equal or impartial regard to every man's deserts: equitably.  
* "Ἀγαθῶν ἐνὶ δικαιοὶ ὑπὸ Ἀντίφασις Ἀγαθῶν. E. Plat.  

and
Truths belonging to a Private Man, &c. 215

and the vicious (as they scarcely cannot be) with theirs. And why should we not think, that an association and communion of souls with those of their own size, disposition, and habits may be more universal and compleat, when those things, which in great measure hinder it here, shall be no more? If we may think this, certainly those fields or states, in which the virtuous and wise shall meet, must be different from those in which the foolish and vicious shall herd together. The very difference of the company will itself create a vast difference in the manner of their living.

XIII. The mansions, and conditions of the virtuous and reasoning part must be proportionably better than those of the foolish and vicious. The proposition cannot be inverted, or the case be otherwise, if the constitution of things depends upon a reasonable cause: as I have endeavored to shew it does.

Cor. Hence it follows, that the practice of reason (in its just extent) is the great preparative for death, and the means of advancing our happiness through all our subsequent duration. But moreover,

XIV. In the future state respect will be had not only to men's reasoning, and virtues, or the contrary, but also to their enjoyments and sufferings here. Because the forementioned inequalities of this world can by no means be redrest, unless men's enjoyments and sufferings, taken together with their virtues and vices, are compared and balanced. I say, taken together: because no reason can be assigned, why a vicious man should be recompensed for the pains and mischiefs and troubles, which he brings upon himself by his vices, as the natural consequences of them; nor, on the other side, why any deductions should be made from the future happiness of a good man upon the score of those innocent enjoyments, which are the genuine fruit of his moderation, regularity, other virtues, and sound reasoning.

Cor. Wicked men will not only be less happy than the wise and virtuous, but be really unhappy in that state to come. For when all the happiness, that answers to those degrees of virtue, which they had, and those sufferings, which they underwent, above what was the natural effect of their wickedness; I say, when

* Oi πειρατοφιλοφιλοφιλος δεξιος, or oi ἴλιθιος, φιλοσοφος, in Plato's style.
* Τελευτάσσεται ἵνα τῆς ψυχῆς μὲν ὁ ἄντων καθαρὸς τόμος ὡς Νεξιον, εὐθέως ἐγὼ ἄντων ἀμοιφήματα ἡ διαγωγή ἐλθὼν, καὶ τοὺς συνόντες, Plato.
* Εἰ πλῶν ὁ ἀμαρτημάτων κολάζεται [ὁ δικαιο-], προδήκη δικαιοσύνη ἐν τῷ λογίσμῳ. Chryl.

** that
The Religion of Nature. Sect. IX.

that is subtracted, what remains upon the account will be something below no-
happiness: which must be some quantity of positive unhappiness, or misery.

Thus there will be rewards, and punishments hereafter: and men will be hap-
py, or unhappy, according to their behaviour, enjoyments, and sufferings in
this present life. But,

XV. If the immortality of the soul cannot be demonstrated, yet it is certain the
contrary cannot. To say, when a house is ruinous and fall, that it once had
an inhabitant, and that he is escaped out of it, and lives in some other place,
can involve no contradiction, or absurdity. And,

XVI. If the immortality of the soul should be considered only as a probability, or
even as a chance possible, yet still a virtuous life is to be preferred before its con-
trary. For if the soul be mortal, and all perception perishes for ever at our death,
what in this case does a good man lose by his virtue? Very rarely more than some
acts of devotion, and instances of mortification, which too by custom grow
habitual and easy, and it may be pleasant by being (or seeming at least to be)
reasonable. On the other hand, what does a vicious man gain? Only such in-
joyments, as a virtuous man leaves: and those are such, as most commonly
owe their being to a vitiated taste; grow insipid in time; require more trouble
and contrivance to obtain them, than they are worth; go off disagreeably;

* Sure those arguments in Lucretius can convince no body. Nunc quomiam, quassatis undique va-
sis, Diffusere humorem, & laticem discedere cernis; Crede animam quoque diffundi, &c. And Præterea
gigni pariter cum corpore & unà Crefere fominus, pariterque fenesere mentem, &c. Quare animum
quoque diffolvi fatigare neceffè est; Quandiquidem penetrant in eum contagia morbi. Nor those in
Pline (N.H. 7. 55.): if there really are any at all. For to plead the antegensiale experimentum is
to beg the question; which may be put thus, Whether we shall after death be more conscious of
our existence, than we were before we were born. And if Dicaearchus’s Lesbici were extant, I be-
lieve we should find nothing stronger in them. The truth seems to be, Oi βολειαι ο καρδίς ενάματο
την τινα αντι ψυχής: but he comforts himself with this thought, that εἰ μετά Δαίμων εστίν αυτή
will prevent future sufferings. This is εἰ το μὴ είναι καταφυγί. Hieroc.
 b Nor that the
soul still exists ἐγγενῶς καταλίπτοτα ζωὴς ἐν ὑμετέρῳ δικαίῳ. Ph. J. Domus ab habitatore deferta dilabitar:
— & corpus, reliquum ab anima, definit. Laét.
 c Μακρὸς ὡς ἐκ τοῦ ἀνθρώπου, ἐν τούτῳ τῷ κρατεῖν, καὶ τρίχως το πρῶτον εἰσὶν ὧν ἔκειν ἀνθρώπων ἐπεὶ ἀπειρήματος ἦνομα, ἱεράς ὀνοματεῖν πίλειν, Ἡσ.
are follow'd many times by sharp reflexions and bitter penances in the rear; and at best after a short time end in nothing, as if they had never been. This is all.

But then if the soul prove to be immortal (as we have all the reason in the world to think it will), what does the virtuous man gain? His present pleasures (if not so many) are more sincere and natural; and the effect of his self-denials and submission to reason, in order to prepare himself for a future state, is the happiness of that state: which, without pretending to describe it, may be presumed to be immortal, because the soul is so; and to be purer and of a more exalted nature (i.e. truer, and greater) than any of these low enjoyments here, because that state is every way in nature above this. And again, what does the wicked man lose? That happiness, which the virtuous gain as such; and he sinks, beside, into some degree of the unhappiness of that future state: of which one may say in general, that it may be as much greater than the unhappiness or sufferings of this world, as the happiness and joys of that are above those of this.

In a state that is spiritual and clear every thing will be purer, and operate more directly and strongly, and (if the expression may be tolerated) with more spirit: there will be fewer obstructions to either happiness or unhappiness: the soul will be more open, and have more immediate and acute perceptions of either: so that each of them in their kind will be more intense, the one nearer to pure or mere happiness, the other to the contrary. But to enter further into the nature and oeconomy of the yet unknown world is too arduous an undertaking for my philosopher.

I shall only add, that the reasoning and virtuous man has at least this advantage over the foolish and profligate, that, tho his wisdom and virtue cannot always rectify that which is amiss in himself or his circumstances, they will find means to alleviate his pressures and disadvantages, and support him under all the anomalies of life, with comforts of which the other knows nothing: particularly this, the enjoyment of an humble, but well grounded expectation of felicity hereafter, sincere and durable.

* Calo prefertur Adonis.  

'Ο ἀληθὴς διαπίστως ζει, οὐδεὶς ἀμαθείας κατάφθανα, Hieroc.  

If the soul was mortal, yet the virtuous man had to undertake to preserve his wisdom, to imitate virtue, receive virtue, to be wise and good, to the end. Simil.  

And I at my  

μόνον τῷ καλῷ περιήγησα τῷ οἴδαντί τῷ φίλῳ μέγα, ἅλλα ζει ζει 

τῇ ὑδάῃ πάντως, δι η δὴ καλῆ πάντως καλὶν ὄ 

φίλῳς υπάρχειν. Hier.  

Οἱ ὁπόδεις τῷ ἁθίου, τι μόνοι ἄλλο πλεονεκτῶσ, ἄλλοι δὲ καθὼς 

οὐ σπανίωσιν ὕπειροχως, ὑπερ.
The Religion of Nature. Sect. IX.

XVII. He therefore, who would act according to truth, must, in the last place, not only consider what he is, and how circumstantial in this present state, and provide accordingly; but, further, must consider himself also as one whose existence proceeds on into another, and provide for that too. How I think this is to be done, by this time I hope you fully apprehend.

For a conclusion of the whole matter; let our conversation in this world, so far as we are concerned, and able, be such as acknowledges every thing to be what it is (what it is in itself, and what with regard to us, to other beings, to causes, circumstances, consequences): that is, let us by no act deny any thing to be true, which is true: that is, let us act according to reason: and that is, let us act according to the law of our nature. By honestly endeavouring to do this we shall express our duty to Him, who is the Author of it, and of that law; and at the same time prosecute our own proper happiness (the happiness of rational beings): we shall do what tends to make us easy here, and be qualifying our selves and preparing for our removal hence to our long home; that great revolution, which, at the farthest, cannot be very far off.

And now, Sir, the trouble is almost over for the present, not properly which I give you, but which you have brought upon yourself, these being the Thoughts, which you desired: unless I have any where misrepresented myself through inadvertence, which I own may be. At the foot of the page I have in some places subjoin'd a few little stricures principally of antiquity, after the manner of annotations: such as, when I came to revise these sheets, I could recollect upon the sudden; having no common-place book to help me, not thought of any such thing before that time. They may serve perhaps sometimes a little to explain the text; and sometimes to add weight; but chiefly to divert you, who know very well how to improve any the least hint out of the Ancients, and I fear will want to be diverted. I have also printed a few copies of this Sketch, not with any design to make it public, but merely to save the trouble of transcribing; being minded, since I have made it, to leave it not only with you, but perhaps also with two or three other friends:

a Some more were added in the second impression.  

b Some more were intended at first. See the advertisement.

c Nothing more was intended at first. See the advertisement.
(or however, with my Family, as a private monument of one that meant well. Tho, as to the disposal and fate of it, much will depend upon your judgment and manner of acceptance.

WILLIAM WOLLASTON)
A Compleat Index to the Religion of Nature Delineated.

A.

Actions, morally good or evil, in what creatures to be found p. 7, 8
— their spring 173
— are expressive as well as words 8—13
— may be significant or insignificant 11

— the same, when indifferent, may have contrary significations 12
— some have an unalterable meaning ibid.
— what constitutes their depravity 13
— what makes them unnatural ibid.
— morally good or evil, which 20
— good, not equal 22
F f Actions
INDEX.

Actions, suppose the agent susceptible
of happiness or misery 38
—— according to right reason, and
according to truth, the same
50
—— public not to be determined by
private judgment 53
Adultery, its heinous nature laid open
141, 142
Affection, natural, its dictates to be
follow'd 165
Agent, its difference from instrument
8
Agents, necessary, have no 89 ibid.
Animals, the wisdom expressed in their
structure 82, 83
—— the laws by which they are
govern'd 96, 97
Astronomy affords noble proofs of a
deity 78—80
Attraction, what 79
—— how lodged in matter ibid.

B.

Beings, different orders thereof
108
Brutes, their sufferings and death
not like to those of men 34, 35
—— cautions to be observed in killing
them for use 35
—— their difference from men 210,
211

C.

Causes, when satisfactorily known
81
—— the same with effects ibid.
Chance, what 83
—— no cause 83, 84
Chastity, what
Children, whence like their parents
89, 90
—— their duty to parents 163—
165
Comets, their motions and phenomena
80
Common-sense, no proper judge of
actions 23
Compassion, a natural principle in
man 139, 140
—— most visible in the best men
ibid.
Conflagrations, whether any have
been universal 91—93
Consequences, when just 44
Covetousness, its several kinds
—— may be virtuous ibid.
Crimes may be evanescent 31
—— so many acts of injustice 141
—— of a less heinous nature represented
144
Criminals, their difference 34
Cruelty, what 139, 140, 141
—— inconsistent with truth and nature
139, 140

D.

Death may enlarge the faculties of
the soul 199
Defence, mutual, one end of society
153
Deluges, whether any have been uni-
versal 91—93
Despotic power not founded in paternal
authority 162, 163
Dominion not given, or lost, by per-
sonal excellencies, or defects
130
Doubtful
### INDEX.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Doubtful cases, how to proceed in them</th>
<th>31, 58, 59</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Duration, what</td>
<td>75</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Duties of rational agents, what</td>
<td>63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— of parents to their children</td>
<td>159–163</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— of children to their parents</td>
<td>163–165</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— owing to remote relations</td>
<td>167–169</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Education of children incumbent on their parent</td>
<td>560, 161</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Endeavour, what it means</td>
<td>63</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Enjoyments, when lawful</td>
<td>46</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Error, its causes</td>
<td>59–62</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Evil, its degrees how to be rated</td>
<td>22</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— no independent principle of it</td>
<td>71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— whence it may proceed</td>
<td>71, 72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— its formal ratio</td>
<td>138</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Facts more expressive than words</td>
<td>12, 13</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— help us to judge of good and evil</td>
<td>23</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Faculties remain in the body, tho their instruments are lost</td>
<td>185, 196, 198</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fallhoods expressible by actions</td>
<td>11</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fame, what</td>
<td>117, 118</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fate, what</td>
<td><em>ibid.</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Freedom, whether in man</td>
<td>63, 64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Forbearance from action in the power of man</td>
<td>64</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Fortitude, what</td>
<td>182, 183</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Frugality, what</td>
<td>180</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Future-state, the necessity thereof</td>
<td>113, 114</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— the expectation of it just and reasonable</td>
<td>193–211</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>G.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Generation of animals, how performed</td>
<td>89–91</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— the desire of it, when justifiable</td>
<td>118</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>God, seeks not the unhappiness of his creatures</td>
<td>39</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— how he conceives of things</td>
<td>45, 101</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— his existence proved by the chain of causes</td>
<td>65–68</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— his existence proved by the faculties of the mind</td>
<td>87–93</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— necessarily existent</td>
<td>68</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— produced every thing</td>
<td><em>ibid.</em></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— shewn to be infinite</td>
<td>69</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— his manner of existence inconceivable</td>
<td>69, 70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— exists in a perfect manner</td>
<td>70</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— is but one</td>
<td>70, 71</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— supports all other beings</td>
<td>72</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— is the Author of nature</td>
<td>72, 73</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— not the immediate Author of the acts of free agents</td>
<td>74</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— not space, duration or matter</td>
<td>74–76</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— not the universe</td>
<td>75, 76</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— the cause of matter and motion</td>
<td>76–79</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>— the Author of the universe</td>
<td>79–87</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

**F**

- God
God, is free from defects 93, 94
— is incomprehensible ibid.
— operates in the government of the world 94, 95
— governs the world by his providence 95—114
— his foreknowledge reconcilable with human liberty 99—103
— the duty which men should have towards him 114—126
— how to be conceived of by man ibid.
— his attributes, how to be understood ibid.
Good and evil, coincident with pleasure and pain 35
— how imputable to intelligent beings 63
Government, its origin 149, 150
Gravitation not alone sufficient to produce the motions of the heavenly bodies 79
Guilt, its degrees vary with the importance of things 31

H.

Happiness, nearly allied to truth
— how to be estimated 33
— coincident with the true quantity of pleasure 36, 37
— whether capable of existing without pleasure 37
— ultimate, what 38
— the duty of every intelligent being to procure 38
— ultimate, not procurable but by the practice of truth 38, 39
— never destructive of the nature of the creature 39

INDEX.

Index.

———wherein it consists 40
——— coincide with truth ibid.
——— the end of religion ibid.
——— hard to judge of it in others ibid.
——— every man's property 131
——— ought to be defended 132, 133
——— how obtainable 218
Heavens, signs of providence therein 104, 105
Honour, how to be given to God 116—119
Honours, what 118, 119
— when the desire of them justifiable 118
Humanity, what 139
Human life, its history 201—208

I.

Ideas, immediate, adequately known to the mind 42
— their immediate relations known to the mind 42, 43
Identity, in men, what 127, 198
Inanimate beings capable of no obligation 63
— govern'd by certain laws 96
Individuation, a principle in man 127
Indolence, a happiness infinitely diminished 37
Injustice, a violation of truth 137, 138
Innate maxims no proper judges of right and wrong 23
Intelligent beings have immediate objects of their understandings 41

Intelligent
Intelligent beings have general ideas

are under obligations in proportion to their faculties

Irregularities in nature, whence

Irreligion, its principle cause

Judgment, how to be form'd in dubious cases

Justice, what—

the practice of it right

K.

Incited, to find the degrees of obligation between them

the dictates of natural affection for them to be regarded.

L.

Law of nature, what

Laws obtaining in the univerfe

of society, natural

must consist with natural justice

must be observed

where they fail, those of nature take place

ibid.

what to be done when they oppose the laws of nature

Life, wherein it consists

Life, human, its history

Love of our country, whence

M.

MAN, not absolutely free

his duty towards God

a social creature

the best judge of himself

has some things in common with inferior creatures

is endow'd with various faculties

is conscious of liberty

possessed of many inclinations and aversions

sensible of defects

defirous of happiness

must be subject to reason

must provide for himself

must hearken to his affections

must remember he is but man

must examine himself and repent

must labor to improve his faculties

must be advised

must lay aside his prejudices

must live virtuously

is compounded of soul and body

summary of his duty in life

Marriage, its foundation and ends

its advantages

Marriage,
INDEX:

Marriage, the nature of the compact 156, 157
—its obligations how strengthened 157
—how made a natural relation 158
—how best to be undertaken ibid.
—the contract to be religiously observed ibid.
—the behaviour it requires under affliction 159
—whether it gives authority to the man ibid.
—the foundation of all natural relations 166
—makes a strict union ibid.

Mathematicians, their way of reasoning 44, 45

Matter, what 74, 75
—its manner of existence 77, 78
—not self-existent 76, 77
—whether capable of thinking 186, 193

Men, whether they have existed from eternity 91—93

Mercy, what 139
—the practice of it right 141

Mind, its operation in reasoning 47
—its progress in knowledge 54, 55
—how it gradually increases its faculties 87
—may be affected by sudden influences 105—107

Monarchy, not founded in paternal authority 162, 163

Monsters, whence 84, 85

Moral good and evil, what 7, 8, 20

—coincident with right and wrong 20, 22
—the vulgar rules for distinguishing between them faulty 22

Morality, its just foundation 25

Motion, what, and how caused 77, 78, 187, 184

Murder, its heinous nature 29, 141

N.

Nations to be consider'd as single persons 153

Natural religion, its foundation 25, 26, 52
—why so called 40
—is the pursuit of happiness by the practice of reason and truth 52

Nature, what 86
—various significations of the word 87
—how rightly followed 13—23
—that of man not purely rational 23
—the law of its Author 26

Neglects may be inconsistent with truth 16—18

O.

Objects, why not perceiv'd in sleep 198

Obligations of a mixed kind 19

Occupancy, prime, gives right 134

Omissions
INDEX.

PAIN may infinitely exceed pleasure
—when true and real
Pain and pleasure, no criterions of
—————proportionable to the
—————increased with the
—————their causes relative
—————how to be estimated
—————not to be judged of
—————the same with good and evil
—————may bear different
—————when equal they destroy each other
—————may change their
Parents, their duties to their children
——their authority over their children
——their authority not dominion
Particles, their mental use

Passions of the mind, expressible by
——geiture
——————no infirmities
Perception always produced in time

Planets habitable
Pleasure, what
————when true and real
————only the true kind good
Possession, original, gives the greatest
right
Power gives no dominion or right
Praise, what
————how to be given to God
Prayer, a neglect of it a denial of God
————how to be offered up to God
————requisites to the solemn kind
————the proper times and places
————in what words to be put up
——————ibid.
——————the mental also verbal
——————to be made audible
——————not to be made extempore
——————in what posture to be offer’d
——————public, of the nature of private
————true prayer always private
——————its effects
Principles of things, unsearchable
INDEX.

Probability, the substitute for certainty 55–62
———rules for finding it 56–58
———its highest degree 85
———its force the result of reason and observation 58
———the only light when certainty leaves us 59
Property, upon what it depends 107
——equal in a state of nature 130
——founded in nature and truth 136
——gives absolute right of disposal 136, 137
——not justly distinguish’d from usufruct 137
Propositions once true remain so in all cases 43
Providence, what 95
——whether there be a divine providence 95–114
——instances thereof in the world 96
——particular, its existence proved 98–114
——its phenomena accounted for ibid.
——invisible ministers thereof 107, 108
Punishments to be differently suited
——naturally annexed to crimes 143
——whether they can be eternal 200

R.

Rational, what denominates a creature so 45

Reaction in matter 132
Reason the judge of actions 23
———differs from particular knowledge 41, 42
——a fix’d and general thing 41
——the faculty, what 45
——relative to the being who is possessed of it ibid.
——how improvable 46
——why it influences men so little ibid.
——design’d as the governing principle in man 51
——its criterion 52
——of greater authority than sense 54
——whether things are govern’d by it 110–114
——the great preparative for death 215
——whence different in different men 213
Reasoning, a method to improve in it 46, 50–53
——may be rightly exercis’d on false propositions 46, 47
——the requisites to strict reasoning 47
——to what lengths it may reach 49
——right reasoning no chimæra ibid.
——false reasoning, whence 49, 50
Reflection, its difference from perception 32, 33
Relation, how weaken’d by removal from the parents 166
Relations, determine the nature of things, and are the guide of our actions 18, 19, 27, 28

Relations,
INDEX.

Relations, not immediate, discoverable by such as are intermediate 43

Religion, what 25, 69, 126
—— its foundation 7, 25, 126
—— its sum and substance 126
Reprisals lawful 131—133
Repulsion in matter 79
Revelation, how to be treated 211
Rewards and punishments unequally distributed by human laws 34
—— their unequal distribution in this life argues the being of another 201—203, 215, 216
—— brought about by the laws of nature 104
Right, natural, what 127, 128
—— strong in the first occupier 134
Right and wrong, what 14, 20
—— how to be judged of 129
Rights, natural, how far a Man may part with them 150

S.

Seasons, how wisely contrived 82
Secrecy no excuse for injustice 143
Self, wherein it consists 127
Self-defense lawful 131, 132
Self-denial necessary 175
Self-preservation, a strong principle in animals 132
Sensation, how perform'd 177
Senses may give false representations of things 53, 54
—— when to be credited 55
Sentiments, expressible by gesture 8
Sins, not excused by secrecy 143
—— tendencies towards them criminal 143, 144
—— their heinous nature manifested 141—144

Society, the laws thereof 128
—— laws necessary therein 145, 147
—— its basis 128, 129
—— reasons for it 145
—— its end 128, 129, 147, 148
—— supposes government 149, 150
—— supposes rules agreed to 147
—— may be justly form'd 150
—— may be form'd by implicit or explicit consent 151
—— duties required in it 152

Soul, what 192, 193
—— its dependent manner of existence 88
—— its existence proved 184—186
—— not ex traduce 88—93
—— not a faculty 191, 192
—— immaterial 186—143
—— its seat, where 184, 192, 198
—— proved immortal 193—211
—— may think immortal, tho not in sound sleep 199
—— may have its faculties enlarged after death 199, 217
—— passes into a new state after death, agreeable to its nature 212
—— will after death have a seat assigned it suitable to its perfection 213—215
—— its difference, whence in different persons 213, 214
—— its two principal faculties 214
—— its mortality not demonstrable 216, 217

Sounds, either significant or not 11
Space, what 74, 75
Spirit, proofs of its existence 90, 91

Gg Spirit,
INDEX.

Spirit, whether the notion of it be clear to the mind 108
Stars, their phenomena 80
State of nature, gives equal dominion 129, 130
Succession may give right 135
Sun, demonstrates the grandeur of the system 80

— discoverable by reasoning 48, 49
— may rise from error 54, 55
— many qualifications requisite to judge of them 61, 62
— whether men can act agreeably to them when discovered 62

U.

Unhappiness, coincident with the true quantity of pain 36, 37
— ultimate, what 38
Unmercifulness, what 139
— inconsistent with truth and nature ibid.
Usage, proves possession 10, 137
Usurpation of property, injustice 137

V.

Vapors, the wisdom and goodness expressed in their formation 82
Vegetables, the wisdom expressed in their structure ibid.
— the laws by which they are regulated 96
Vice, the cause of unhappiness 215, 216
— its effects and consequences 216
Virtue, whether seated between extremes 24, 25
— the practice of it recommended 179—183
— productive of happiness 182, 203—208, 217

W.
INDEX.

W.

WAR shewn to be lawful 153, 154
Writing, why best practised in our mother-tongue 123
Words, what 12, 123
— their use in thinking 122, 123
— less expressive than facts 12
World, a survey thereof and its furniture 87
— laws of nature observed therein 76—98
Worship, how to be given to God 120—126
— publick, why necessary 124, 125.

FINIS.